

Key of Knowledge

NORA ROBERTS

JOVE BOOKS, NEW YORK

This is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are the

product of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously, and any resemblance to

actual persons, living or dead, business establishments, events, or locales is

entirely coincidental.

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

A Jove Book / published by arrangement with the author

PRINTING HISTORY

Jove edition / December 2003

Copyright (c) 2003 by Nora Roberts

Excerpt from Key of Valor copyright (c) 2003 by Nora Roberts

Cover design by Richard Hasselberger

Book design by Kristin del Rosario

All rights reserved.

This book, or parts thereof, may not be reproduced in any form without permission. The scanning, uploading, and distribution of this book via the Internet

or via any other means without the permission of the publisher is illegal and

punishable by law. Please purchase only authorized electronic editions, and do not participate in or encourage electronic piracy of copyrighted materials. Your support of the author's rights is appreciated.

For information address: The Berkley Publishing Group,
a division of Penguin Group (USA) Inc., 375 Hudson Street, New York,
New

York 10014.

ISBN: 0-515-13637-9

A JOVE BOOK(r) Jove Books are published by The Berkley Publishing Group,

a division of Penguin Group (USA) Inc., 375 Hudson Street, New York,
New
York 10014.

JOVE and the "J" design are trademarks belonging to Penguin Group
(USA) Inc.

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

For Ruth and Marianne,
who are that most precious of gifts -
friends

It takes two to speak the truth- one to speak, and another to hear.

-THOREAU

Chapter One

DANA Steele considered herself a flexible, open-minded woman, with
no

less than her fair share of patience, tolerance, and humor.

A number of people might have disagreed with this self-portrait.

But what did they know?

In one month's time, her life had, through no fault of her own, taken a
sharp

turn off its course and into territory •so strange and uncharted she
couldn't explain

the route or the reason even to herself.

But wasn't she going with the flow?

She'd taken it on the chin when Joan, the malicious library director, had
promoted her own niece by marriage over other, more qualified, more
dependable,

more astute, and certainly more attractive candidates. She'd sucked it up,
hadn't

she, and done her job?

And when that completely undeserved promotion had caused a squeeze
resulting in a certain more qualified

2 NORA ROBERTS

employee's hours and paycheck being cut to the bone, had she
pummeled the

despicable Joan and the incessantly pert Sandi to bloody pulps?

No, she had not. Which in Dana's mind illustrated her exquisite restraint. When her greedy bloodsucker of a landlord raised her rent to coincide with

her pay cut, had she clamped her hands around his scrawny neck and squeezed

until his beady eyes popped?

Again, she had demonstrated control of heroic proportions.

Those virtues might've been their own reward, but Dana enjoyed more tangible benefits.

Whoever had come up with that business about a door opening when a window closes hadn't known much about Celtic gods. Dana's door hadn't opened.

It had been blown clean off its hinges.

Even with all she'd seen and done, with all she'd been a part of over the last

four weeks, it was hard to believe that she was now stretched out in the backseat

of her brother's car, once again heading up the steep, winding road to the great

stone house of Warrior's Peak.

And what waited for her there.

It wasn't storming, as it had been on her first trip to the Peak after receiving

that intriguing invitation for "cocktails and conversation" from Rowena and

Pitte-an invitation that had gone out to only two other women. And she wasn't

alone. And this time, she thought, she knew exactly what she was in for.

Idly, she opened the notebook she'd brought along and read the summary she'd written of the story she'd heard on her first visit to Warrior's Peak.

The young Celtic god who would be king falls for a human girl during his

traditional sojourn in the mortal dimension. (Which I relate to spring break.)

Young

stud's parents indulge him, break the rules and allow him to bring the maid behind what's called either Curtain of Dreams or Curtain of Power, and into the realm of the gods.

This is cool with some of the gods, but pisses others off.

War, strife, politics, intrigue follow.

Young god becomes king, makes human wife queen. They have three daughters.

Each daughter-demigoddess-has a specific talent or gift. One is an, or beauty, the second is knowledge or truth, the third is courage or valor.

Sisters are close and happy and grow to young womanhood, tra-la-la, under the

watchful eye of the female teacher and the male warrior guardian given the task by god-king.

Teacher and warrior fall in love, which blinds the eye enough that it isn't kept sharp on the daughters.

Meanwhile, bad guys are plotting away. They don't take to human or half-human

types in their rarefied world, especially in positions of power. Dark forces go to

work. A particularly evil-minded sorcerer (probably related to Library Joan) takes

charge. A spell is cast on the daughters while teacher and warrior are starry-eyed.

The daughters' souls are stolen, locked in a glass box, known as the Box of Souls,

which can only be opened by three keys turned by human hands.

Although the

gods know where to find the keys, none of them can break the spell or free the

souls.

Teacher and warrior are cast out, sent through the Curtain of Dreams into the mortal world. There, in each generation three human women are born who have the means to find the keys and end the curse. Teacher and warrior must find the women, and these women must be given the choice of accepting the quest or rejecting it.

4

Each, in turn, has one moon phase to find a key. If the first fails, game over. And not without penalty-each would lose an undisclosed year of her life. If she

succeeds, the second woman takes up the quest, and so on. An annoyingly cryptic clue-the only help teacher and warrior are allowed to give the three lucky women-is revealed at the start of the four-week cycle.

If the quest is completed, the Box of Souls will be opened and the Daughters of Glass freed. And the three women will each be awarded a cool one million dollars.

A pretty story, Dana mused, until you understood it wasn't a story but fact. Until

you understood you were one of the three women who had the means to unlock the

Box of Souls.

Then it just got weird.

Add in some dark, powerful sorcerer god named Kane who really wanted you to

fail and could make you see things that weren't there-and not see things that wereand

the whole business took on a real edge.

But there were good parts too. That first night she'd met two women who had turned out to be really interesting people, and soon she felt as though she'd known them all her life. Well enough, Dana reminded herself, that the three of them were going into business together.

And one of them had turned out to be the love of her brother's life. Malory Price, the organized soul with the artist's heart, not only had outwitted a sorcerer with a few thousand years under his belt but had found the key, opened the lock, and bagged the guy.

All in less than four weeks.

It was going to be hard for Dana and their pal Zoe to top that one.

Then again, Dana reminded herself, she and Zoe didn't have the distraction of romance to clog the works. And she didn't have a kid to worry about, as Zoe did.

Nope, Dana Steele was footloose and fancy-free, with nothing to pull her focus away from the prize.

If she was next at bat, Kane had better set for the long ball.

Not that she had anything against romance, she mused, letting the notebook close

as she watched the blaze and blur of trees through the window. She liked men.

Well, most men.

She'd even been in love with one, a million years ago. Of course, that had been a

result of youthful stupidity. She was much wiser now.

Jordan Hawke might have come back to Pleasant Valley, temporarily, a few weeks

ago^ and he might have wheedled his way into being part of the quest.

But he

wasn't a part of Dana's world any longer.

In her world he didn't exist. Except when he was writhing in pain and agony from

some horrible freak accident or a debilitating and disfiguring illness.

It was too bad that her brother, Flynn, had the bad taste to be his friend.

But she

could forgive Flynn for it, and even give him points for loyalty, since he and

Jordan and Bradley Vane had been pals since childhood.

And somehow or other, both Jordan and Brad were connected to the quest. It was

something she would have to tolerate for the duration.

She shifted as Flynn turned to drive through the open iron gates, angled her head

so that she could look up at one of the two stone warriors that guarded the

entrance to the house.

Big, handsome, and dangerous, Dana thought. She'd always liked men who

were-even if they were sculptures.

She scooted up, but kept the long length of her legs on the seat-the only way for

her to ride comfortably in the back of the car.

She was a tall woman with an amazon's build that

would've suited that stone warrior. She combed her fingers through her long swing

of brown hair. Since Zoe, the currently unemployed hairdresser and Dana's new

best friend, had styled it and added highlights, it fell into that casual bell shape

with little or no help from Dana. It saved her time in the morning, which she

appreciated, as morning wasn't her best time of day. And the cut was flattering,

which suited her vanity.

Her eyes, a deep, dark brown, locked on the elegant sprawl of black stone that was the house at Warrior's Peak. Part castle* part fortress, part fantasy, it spread over the rise, speared up into a sky as clear as black glass. Lights shimmered against its many windows, and still, Dana imagined, there were so many secrets in the shadows. She'd lived in the valley below for all the twenty-seven years of her life. And for all of them, the Peak had been a fascination. Its shape and shadow on the rise above her pretty little town had always struck her as something out of a faerie tale-and not the tidied-up, bloodless versions either. She'd often wondered what it would be like to live there, to wander through all the rooms, to walk out on the parapet or gaze down from a tower. To live so high, in such magnificent solitude, with the majesty of the hills all around and the charm of the woods only steps beyond the door. She stirred herself now, shifting around so her head was between Flynn's and Malory's. They were so damn cute together, she thought. Flynn with his deceptively easygoing nature, Malory with her need for order. Flynn with his lazy green eyes, Malory with her bright, bold blue ones. There was Mai, with her stylish coordinated outfits, and Flynn, who was lucky if he could put his hands on a pair of matching socks. Yes, Dana decided, they were perfect for one another.

She thought of Malory as her sister now, through circumstance and fate.
And
really, wasn't that how Flynn had
become her brother all those years ago when her father and his mother
had
married and merged families?
When her dad had gotten sick, she'd leaned hard on Flynn. She supposed
they'd
leaned hard on each other more than once. When the doctors had
recommended
that her father move to a warmer climate, when Flynn's mother had
shoved the
responsibility of running the Valley Dispatch into Flynn's hands and he'd
found
himself the publisher of a small-town paper instead of living his dream
of honing
his reporting skills in New York.
When the boy she'd loved had left her.
When the woman he'd intended to marry had left him.
Yeah, they'd had each other-through thick and thin. And now, in their
own ways,
they each had Malory. It was a nice way to round things out.
"Well." Dana laid her hands on their shoulders. "Here we go again."
Malory turned, gave Dana a quick smile. "Nervous?"
"Not so much."
"It's either you or Zoe tonight. Do you want to be picked?"
Ignoring the little flutter in her stomach, Dana shrugged. "I just want to
get going
on it. I don't know why we have to go through all this ceremony. We
already know
what the deal is."
"Hey, free food," Flynn reminded her.
"There is that. Wonder if Zoe's here yet. We can dive into whatever our
hosts,

Rowena and Pitte, picked up in the land of milk and honey, then get this show on the road."

She climbed out the minute Flynn stopped the car, then Dana stood with her hands

on her hips, studying the house while the ancient man with a shock of white hair

hurried up to take the keys.

"Maybe you're not nervous." Malory came to stand beside her, linked arms.

"But I am."

"Why? You dunked your shot."

8

"It's still up to all of us." She looked up at the white flag with its key emblem that

flew atop the tower.

"Just think positive." Dana drew in a long breath. "Ready?"

"If you are." Malory held out a hand for Flynn's.

They walked toward the huge entrance doors, which swung open at their approach.

Rowena stood in the flood of light, her hair a firestorm falling over the bodice of a

sapphire velvet dress. Her lips were curved in welcome, her exotic green eyes

bright with it.

Gems sparkled at her ears, her wrists, her fingers. On a long braided chain that

hung nearly to her waist was a crystal as clear as water and as fat as a baby's fist.

"Welcome." Her voice was low and musical and seemed to hold hints of forests

and caves where faeries might dwell. "I'm so pleased to see you." She held out her

hands to Malory, then leaned forward and kissed both of her cheeks in turn. "You

look wonderful, and well."

"So do you, always."

With a light laugh, Rowena reached for Dana's hand. "And you. Mmm, what a

wonderful jacket." She skimmed her fingers along the sleeve of the butter-soft

leather. But even as she spoke, she was looking beyond them and out the door.

"You didn't bring Moe?"

"It didn't seem like quite the occasion for a big, clumsy dog," Flynn told her.

"It's always the occasion for Moe." Rowena rose on her toes to peck Flynn's cheek.

"You must promise to bring him next time."

She slid her arm through Flynn's. "Come, we'll be comfortable in the parlor."

They crossed the great hall with its mosaic floor, moved through the wide arch to

the spacious room glowing from the flames in the massive hearth and the light of

dozens of white candles.

Pitte stood at the mantel, a glass of amber liquid in his

9

hand. The warrior at the gate, Dana thought. He was tall, dark, dangerously

handsome, with a muscular and ready build that his elegant black suit couldn't

disguise.

It was easy to imagine him wearing light armor and carrying a sword. Or sitting

astride a huge black horse and wearing a cape that billowed at the gallop.

He gave a slight and courtly bow as they entered.

Dana started to speak, then a movement caught the corner of her eye.

The friendly

smile vanished from her face, her brows beetled, and her eyes flashed pure annoyance.

"What's he doing here?"

"He," Jordan said dryly as he lifted a glass, "was invited."

"Of course." Smoothly, Rowena pressed a flute of champagne into Dana's hand.

"Pitte and I are delighted to have all of you here tonight. Please, be at home.

Malory, you must tell me how plans are progressing on your gallery."

With another flute of champagne and a gentle nudge, Rowena had Malory moving

toward a chair. After one look at his sister's face, Flynn chose the better part of

valor and followed them.

Refusing to retreat, Dana sipped her champagne and scowled at Jordan over the

crystal rim of her glass. "Your part in this is finished."

"Maybe it is, maybe it isn't. Either way I get an invitation to dinner from a

beautiful woman, especially if she happens to be a goddess, I accept.

Nice

threads," he commented and fingered the cuff of Dana's jacket.

"Hands off." She jerked her arm out of reach, then plucked a canapé from a tray.

"And stay out of my way."

"I'm not in your way." His voice remained mild, and he took a lazy sip of his drink.

Even though Dana wore heeled boots, he had a couple of inches on her.

Which

was just one more reason to find him irritating. Like Pitte, he could have posed for

one of the stone warriors. He was six-three, every inch of it well

packed. His dark hair could've used a trim, but that slightly curly, slightly unkempt, slightly too long style suited the power of his face. He was, always had been, lustily handsome, with blazing blue eyes under black brows, the long nose, the wide mouth, the strong bones combining in a look that could be charming or intimidating depending on his purpose. Worse, Dana thought, he had an agile and clever mind inside that rock-hard skull. And an innate talent that had made him a wildly successful novelist before he'd hit thirty. Once, she'd believed they would build a life side by side. But to her mind he'd chosen his fame and his fortune over her. And in her heart she had never forgiven him for it. "There are two more keys," he reminded her. "If finding them is important to you, you should be grateful for help. Whatever the source." "I don't need your help. So feel free to head back to New York anytime." "I'm going to see this through. Better get used to it." She snorted, then popped another canapé. "What's in it for you?" "You really want to know?" She shrugged. "I couldn't care less. But I'd think even someone with your limited sensitivity would be aware that you bunking at Flynn's is putting a crimp in the works for the turtledoves there." Jordan followed her direction, noted Hynn sitting with Malory, and the way his friend absently played with the curling ends of her blond hair. "I know how to keep out of their way, too. She's good for him," Jordan added.

Whatever else she could say about Jordan-and there was plenty-she couldn't deny that he loved Flynn. So she swallowed some of the bitterness, and washed the taste of it away with champagne.

"Yeah, she is. They're good for each other."

"She won't move in with him."

Dana blinked. "He asked her to move hi? To live with him? And she said no?"

"Not exactly. But the lady has conditions."

"Which are?"

"Actual furniture in the living room and he has to redo the kitchen."

"No kidding?" The idea had Dana feeling both amused and sentimental at once.

"That's our Mai. Before Flynn knows it, he'll be living in a real house instead of a

building with doors and windows and packing boxes."

"He bought dishes. The kind you wash, not the land you chuck in the trash."

The amusement peaked, bringing shallow dimples to her cheeks. "He did not."

"And knives and forks that aren't plastic."

"Oh, my God, stemware could be next."

"I'm afraid so." ,

She let out a roll of laughter, toasted to her brother's back. "Hook, line, and

sinker."

"That's something I've missed," Jordan murmured. "That's the first time I've heard

you laugh and mean it since I've been back."

She sobered instantly. "It didn't have anything to do with you."

"Don't I know it."

Before she could speak again, Zoe McCourt rushed into the room, steps ahead of

Bradley Vane. She looked flustered, irritated, and embarrassed. Like a sexy wood

sprite, Dana thought, who'd had a particularly bad day.

"I'm sorry. I'm so sorry I'm late."

She wore a short, clingy black dress with long, snug sleeves and an abbreviated

hem that showcased her slim

12

and sinuous curves. Her hair, black and glossy, was short and straight with a long

fringe of bangs accenting long-lidded amber eyes.

Behind her, Brad looked like some golden faerie-tale prince in an Italian suit.

Seeing them together made Dana think what a stunning couple they made-if you

didn't count the frustration emanating from Zoe, or the uncharacteristic stiffness in

Brad's stance.

"Don't be silly." Rowena was already up and crossing to them. "You're not at all

late."

"I am. My car. I had trouble with my car. They were supposed to fix it, but... Well,

I'm very grateful Bradley was driving by and stopped."

She didn't sound grateful, Dana noted. She sounded pissed, with that hint of the

West Virginia hills in her voice giving the temper a nice little edge.

Rowena made sympathetic noises as she led Zoe to a chair, served her champagne.

"I think I could've fixed it," Zoe muttered. "That may be." With obvious gratitude,

Bradley accepted a drink. "But you'd have ended up with grease all over your

dress. Then you'd have needed to go home and change and you'd've been even

later. It's hardly a slap in the face to accept a ride from someone you know who's

going to exactly the same place at the same time."

"I said I was grateful," Zoe shot back, then took a deep breath. "I'm sorry," she said

to the room in general. "It's been one of those days. And I'm nervous on top of it. I

hope I haven't held anything up."

"Not at all." Rowena brushed a hand over her shoulder as a servant came to the

archway and announced dinner. "There, you see? Right on time."

* * *

IT wasn't every day you ate rack of lamb in a castle on a mountaintop in Pennsylvania. The fact that the dining room had twelve-foot ceilings, a trio of

chandeliers sparkling with white and red crystal drops, and a ruby granite fireplace

big enough to hold the population of Rhode Island certainly added to the perks.

The atmosphere should have been intimidating and formal, yet it was welcoming.

Not the sort of place you'd chow down on pepperoni pizza, Dana reflected, but a

nice ambience for sharing an exquisitely prepared meal with interesting people.

Conversation flowed-travel, books, business. It showed Dana the power of their

hosts. It wasn't the norm for a librarian from a small valley town to sit around and

break bread with a couple of Celtic gods, but Rowena and Pitte made it seem

normal.

And what was to come, the next step in the quest, was a subject no one broached.

Because she was seated between Brad and Jordan, Dana angled herself toward

Brad and spent as much of the meal as possible ignoring her other dinner partner.

"What did you do to make Zoe mad?"

Brad flicked a glance across the table. "Apparently, I breathed."

"Come on." Dana gave him a little elbow poke. "Zoe's not like that."

What did you

do? Did you hit on her?"

"I did not hit on her." Years of training kept his voice low, but the acid in it was

still evident. "Maybe it annoyed her that I refused to muck around in her engine,

and wouldn't let her muck around in it either, as we were both dressed for dinner

and were already running late."

Dana's eyebrows rose. "Well, well. Seems she got your back up, too."

"I don't care to be called high-handed and bossy just because I point out the

obvious."

14

Now she smiled, leaned over and pinched his cheek. "But, honey, you are

high-handed and bossy. That's why I love you."

"Yeah, yeah, yeah." But his lips twitched. "Then how come we've never had wild

and crazy sex?"

"I don't know. Let me get back to you on that." She speared another bite of lamb.

"Guess you've been to a lot of snazzy dinners like this, in snazzy places like this."

"There is no other place like this."

It was easy for her to forget that her buddy Brad was Bradley Charles Vane IV,

heir apparent to a lumber empire that had built one of the country's largest and most accessible home improvement and supply chains, HomeMakers. But seeing how smoothly he slid into this sort of sophisticated atmosphere reminded her that he was a great deal more than just the hometown boy. "Didn't your dad buy some big castle place in Scotland a few years back?"

"Manor house, Cornwall. And, yeah, it's pretty incredible. She's not eating much," he murmured and gave a little nod toward Zoe. "She's just nervous. Me too," Dana added, then cut another bite of lamb. "But nothing kills my appetite." She heard Jordan laugh, and the deep male sound of it cruised along her skin. Deliberately, she ate the lamb. "Absolutely nothing."

* * *

SHE was spending most of her time ignoring him, and taking swipes with whatever time she had left over. That, Jordan thought, was Dana's usual pattern when it came to him. He should be used to it. So the fact that it bothered him so much was his problem. Just as finding a way to make them friends again was his mission. They'd once been friends. And a great deal more. The fact 15 that they weren't now was his fault, and he would take the rap for it. But just how long was a man supposed to pay for ending a relationship? Wasn't there a statute of limitations?

She looked incredible, he decided as they gathered back in the parlor for coffee and brandy. But then, he'd always liked her looks, even when she'd been a kid, too tall for her age and with that pudgy of baby fat still in her cheeks. There was no baby fat in evidence now. Anywhere. Just curves, a lot of gorgeous curves.

She'd done something to her hair, he realized, some girl thing that added mysterious light to that dense brown. It made her eyes seem darker, deeper. God, how many times had he felt himself drowning in those rich chocolate eyes?

Hadn't he been entitled to come up for air?

In any case, he'd meant what he'd said to her before. He was back now, and she

was just going to have to get used to it. Just as she would have to get used to the

fact that he was part of this tangle she'd gotten herself into.

She was going to have to deal with him. And it would be his pleasure to make sure

she had to deal with him as often as possible.

Rowena rose. There was something in the movement, in the look of her, that

tickled something at the edge of Jordan's memory. Then she stepped forward,

smiled, and the moment passed.

"If you're ready, we should begin. I think it's more suitable if we continue this in the other parlor."

"I'm ready." Dana got to her feet, then looked at Zoe. "You?"

"Yeah." Though she paled a bit, Zoe clasped hands with Dana. "The first time, all I

could think was don't let me be first. Now I just don't know."

"Me either."

They moved down the great hall to the next parlor. It didn't help to brace himself,
Jordan knew. The portrait swamped him, as it had the first time he'd seen it.

16

The colors, the sheer brilliance of them, the joy and beauty of subject and

execution. And the shock of seeing Dana's body, Dana's face-Dana's eyes looking
back at him from the canvas.

The Daughters of Glass.

They had names, and he knew them now. Niniane, .Venora, Kyna. But when he

looked at the portrait, he saw them, thought of them as Dana, Malory, and Zoe.

The world around them was a glory of sunlight and flowers.

Malory, dressed in a gown of lapis blue, with her rich gold curls spilling nearly to

her waist, held a lap harp. Zoe stood, slim and straight in her shimmering green

dress, a puppy in her arms, a sword at her hip. Dana, her dark eyes lit with

laughter, was gowned in fiery red. She was seated and held a scroll and quill.

They were a unit in that moment of time, in that jewel-bright world behind the

Curtain of Dreams. But it was only a moment, and even then the end was lurking.

In the deep green of the forest, the shadow of a man. On the silver tiles, the

sinuous glide of a snake.

Far in the background, under the graceful branches of a tree, lovers embraced.

Teacher and guard, too wrapped up in each other to sense the danger to their

charges.

And cannily, cleverly hidden in the painting, the three keys. One in the shape of a

bird that winged its way through the impossibly blue sky, another reflecting in the

water of the fountain behind the daughters, and the third secreted among the

branches of the forest.

He knew Rowena had painted it from memory-and that her memory was long.

And he knew from what Malory had discovered and experienced, that moments

after this slice of time, the souls of the daughters had been stolen and locked away

in a box of glass.

Pitte lifted a carved box, opened the lid. "Inside are two disks, one with the

emblem of the key. Whoever

17

chooses the scribed disk is charged to find the second key."

"Like last time, okay?" Zoe gave Dana's hand a hard squeeze. "We look together."

"Okay." Dana took a slow breath as Malory stepped up, laid a hand on her

shoulder, then Zoe's. "Want to go first?"

"Gosh. I guess." Closing her eyes, Zoe reached into the box, closed her hand over

a disk.

With her eyes open and on the portrait, Dana took the one that remained. Then each held her disk out.

"Well." Zoe stared at her disk, at Dana's. "Looks like I'm running the anchor lap."

Dana ran her thumb over the key carved in her disk. It was a small thing, that key,

a straight bar with a spiral design on one end. It looked simple, but she'd seen the real thing-she'd seen the first key in Malory's hand, burning with gold, and knew it wasn't simple at all.

"Okay, I'm up." She wanted to sit, but locked her shaky knees instead. Four weeks,

she thought. She had four weeks from new moon to new moon to do if not the

impossible at least the fantastic.

"I get a clue, right?"

"You do." Rowena took up a sheet of parchment and read:

"You know the past and seek the future. What was, what is, what will be are

woven into the tapestry of all life. With beauty there is blight, with knowledge,

ignorance, and with valor there is cowardice. One is lessened without its opposite.

"To know the key, the mind must recognize the heart, and the heart celebrate the

mind. Find your truth in his lies, and what is real within the fantasy.

"Where one goddess walks, another waits, and dreams are only memories yet to come."

Dana picked up a snifter of brandy, drank deep to untie the knots in her belly.

"Piece of cake," she said.

Chapter Two

McDONALD'S introduced the Big Mac in 1968." Dana swiveled lazily in her

chair at the library's resource desk. "Yes, Mr. Hertz, I'm positive. The Big Mac

went system-wide in '68, not '69, so you've had a year more of the secret sauce

than you thought. Looks like Mr. Foy got you on this one, huh?" She laughed, shook her head. "Better luck tomorrow."

She hung up the phone and crossed the Hertz/Foy daily bet off her list, then meticulously noted today's winner on the tally sheet she kept. Mr. Hertz had nipped Mr. Foy at the end of last month's round, which netted him lunch at the Main Street Diner on Mr. Foy's tab. Though for the year, she noted, Foy was two points up, so he had the edge on bagging dinner and drinks at the Mountain View Inn, the coveted annual prize. This month, they were neck and neck, so it was still anybody's game. It was her task to officially announce the

19

winner each month, and then, with a great deal more ceremony, the trivia champ at year's end.

The two had kept their little contest going for nearly twenty years. She'd been part of it, or had felt like part of it, since she'd started her job at the Pleasant Valley Library with her college degree still crisp in her hand. The daily ritual was something she would miss when she turned in her resignation. Then Sandi breezed by with her bouncy blond ponytail and permanent beauty-contestant smile, and Dana thought there were certain things she would definitely not miss.

The fact was, she should have given her two weeks' notice already. Her hours at the library were down to a stingy twenty-five a week. But that time could be put to

good use elsewhere.

She'd be opening her bookstore, her part of Indulgence, the communal business

she was starting with Zoe and Malory, in just a couple of months. Not only did she

have to finish organizing and decorating her space in the building they'd bought,

but she had to deal with ordering stock.

She'd applied for all the necessary licenses, had already combed through publishers' catalogues, fantasized about her sidelines. She would serve tea in the

afternoon, wine in the evening. Eventually she would hold elegant little events.

Readings, signings, appearances.

It was something she'd always wanted to do but had never really believed she

could accomplish.

She supposed Rowena and Pitte had made it possible. Not only because of the

twenty-five thousand in cold, hard cash they'd given her and the others as an

incentive to agree to the quest, but also by putting her together with Malory and

Zoe.

Each of them had been at a crossroads of sorts the first night they'd met at

Warrior's Peak. And they'd made the turn, chosen the path to follow together.

It wasn't nearly as scary thinking of starting her own business when she had two friends-two partners-doing the same thing.

Then there was the key. Of course, she couldn't forget the key. It had taken Malory

nearly all of the four weeks allowed to find the first. And it hadn't been all fun and

games. Far from it.

Still, they knew more now, more about what they were up against, more about

what was at stake. That had to be an advantage for this round.

Unless you considered that knowing where the keys came from, what they did,

and who didn't want them found had absolutely nothing to do with finding one.

She sat back, closed her eyes, and pondered the clue Rowena had given her. It had

to do with the past, the present, and the future.

Big help.

Knowledge, naturally. Lies and truths. Heart and mind.

Where one goddess walks.

There'd been a goddess, a singing goddess, in Malory's clue. And Malory-the art

lover who'd dreamed of being an artist-had found her key in a painting.

If the other two followed the same theme, logic dictated that she, the book lover,

might find hers in or around books.

"Catching up on your sleep, Dana?"

Dana's eyes snapped open, stared directly into Joan's disapproving ones.

"No.

Concentrating."

"If you've nothing better to do, you can help Marilyn in the stacks."

Dana pasted a sunny smile on her face. "I'd be happy to. Should I ask Sandi to take

over the resource desk?" "You don't seem overrun with questions and requests."

And you don't seem overrun with paperwork and administrative duties, Dana

thought, since you've got so much time to crawl up my butt. "I've just completed

one involving private enterprise and capitalism. But if you'd rather I-"

"Excuse me." A woman stopped at the desk, with her hand on the arm of a boy of about twelve. The grip made Dana think of the way Flynn held Moe's leash. With the hope that she could keep him under control and the certain knowledge that he would bolt at the first opportunity.

"I wonder if you could help us. My son has a paper due ... tomorrow" she added with heated emphasis that had the boy hunching his shoulders. "On the Continental Congress. Can you tell us which books might be the most helpful at this stage of the game?"

"Of course." Like a chameleon, Joan's cold fish of a face warmed into smiles. "I'd be happy to show you several sources in our U.S. history section."

"Excuse me." Unable to help herself, Dana tapped the sulky boy on the shoulder.

"Seventh grade? Mrs. Janesburg, U.S. history?"

His already pouty bottom lip drooped even further.

"Yeah."

"I know just what she looks for. You put in a couple of solid hours on this, you can ace it."

"Really?" The mother laid a hand on Dana's, gripped it like a lifeline.

"That would be a miracle."

"I had Mrs. Janesburg for U.S. and world history." Dana winked at the boy. "I've got her number."

"I'll leave you in Ms. Steele's capable hands." Though her smile remained in place, Joan spoke through gritted teeth.

Dana leaned forward, spoke to the boy in a conspiratorial whisper. "She still get

teary-eyed when she teaches Patrick Henry's 'Give me liberty' spiel?" He brightened up considerably. "Yeah. She had to stop and blow her nose."

"Some things never change. Okay, here's what you need."

Fifteen minutes later, while her son checked out his books with his brand-new

library card, the mother stopped back by Dana's desk. "I just wanted to thank you

again. I'm Joanne Reardon, and you've just saved my firstborn's life."

22

"Oh, Mrs. Janesburg's tough, but she wouldn't have killed him."

"No. I would have. You got Matt excited about doing this paper, if for no other

reason than making him think he'd be pulling one over on his teacher."

"Whatever works."

"My sentiments exactly. Anyway, I appreciate it. You're wonderful at your job."

"Thanks. Good luck."

She was wonderful at her job, Dana concurred. Goddamn it, she was.

The evil

Joan and her toothy niece were going to be sorry when they didn't have Dana

Steele to kick around anymore.

* * *

AT the end of her shift she tidied her area, gathered up a few books she'd checked

out, then hefted her briefcase. Another thing she would miss, Dana thought, was

this end-of-the-day routine, The putting everything in order, taking a last look

around the stacks, the tables, the sweet little cathedral to books before the walk

home.

She would also miss being just a short, pleasant walk from work to her apartment.

It was only one of the reasons she had refused to move in with Flynn when he'd bought his house.

She could still walk to Indulgence, she reminded herself . If she felt like a

two-mile hike. Since that was unlikely to happen, she decided she should appreciate what she had now, while she still had it.

She liked the predictability of her habitual route home, the things she saw season

by season, year by year. Now, with fall in full swing, the streets were full of

golden lights that streamed through the blaze of trees. And the surrounding

mountains rose up like some fabulous tapestry woven by the gods.

She could hear kids, freed from school and not yet locked into the homework hour,

shouting as they raced around the

23

little park between the library and her apartment building. The air was just brisk

enough to carry along that spicy scent from the bed of mums planted outside the

town hall.

The big round clock on the square announced it was 4:05.

She struggled against a wave of resentment when she remembered that, pre-Joan,

it would have read 6:35 on her way home.

Screw it. Just appreciate the extra time, the lovely walk on a sunny afternoon.

Pumpkins on the porches, goblins hanging from branches though it was weeks

before Halloween. Small towns, she mused, prized their holidays. The days were

getting shorter, cooler, but were still warm enough, still long enough to bask in.

The Valley was at its best in autumn, she decided. As close to picture-perfect as

Anywhere, America, could get.

"Hey, Stretch. Carry those for you?"

Her pretty bubble of contentment burst. Before she could snarl, Jordan snatched

the load of books away, tucked them under his own arm.

"Give me those."

"I've got them. Terrific afternoon, huh? Nothing like the Valley in October"

She hated that his words mirrored the ones that had played through her mind. "I

thought the name of the tune was 'Autumn in New York.'"

"And it's a good one." He tipped up the books to read the spines. She had one on

Celtic lore, one on yoga, and the latest Stephen King novel.

"Yoga?"

It was like him, just exactly like him, to home in on the one thing that she found

moderately embarrassing. "So?"

"Nothing. Just can't see you assuming the dragonfly position or whatever." He

narrowed his eyes, and something appealingly wicked moved into the blue. "On

second thought..."

24

"Haven't you got anything better to do than skulking around the library waiting to

accost and annoy me?"

"I wasn't skulking, and hauling your books isn't accosting." He matched his stride

to hers with the ease of long familiarity. "It's not the first time I've walked you

home." "Somehow I've managed to find my way without you the last several years."

"You've managed a lot of things. How's your dad doing?" She bit back a vicious remark because she knew, for all his many flaws, that Jordan asked the question out of a sincere concern. Joe Steele and Jordan Hawke had gotten on like white on rice.

"He's good. He's doing good. The move to Arizona was what he needed. He and

Liz have a nice place, a nice life. He's taken up baking."

"Baking? Like cakes? Joe bakes cakes?" "And scones and fancy bread." She

couldn't stop the smile. The thought of her father, big, macho Joe, in an apron

whipping up cake batter got her every time. "I get a care package every couple of

months. First few contributions made excellent doorstops, but in the last year or so

he's found his rhythm. He makes good stuff."

"Give him my best next time you talk to him." She shrugged. She didn't intend to

mention Jordan Hawke's name, unless it was in a curse. "End of the road," she said

when they reached the door of her apartment building.

"I want to come in."

"Not in this or any other lifetime." She reached for the books, he swung them out

of reach. "Cut it out, Jordan. We're not ten."

"We have things to talk about." "No, we don't."

"Yes, we do. And stop making me feel like I'm ten." He hissed out a breath, prayed

for patience. "Look, Dana, we've got a history. Let's deal with it like grown-ups."

25

Damn if he would so much as hint that she was being immature. The pinhead.

"Okay, here's how we'll deal with it. Give me my books and go away."

"Did you listen to what Rowena said last night?" There was an edge in the tone

now, one that warned her a good, sweaty argument was brewing. "Did you pay any

attention? Your past, present, and future. I'm part of your past. I'm part of this."

"In my past is just where you're going to stay. I wasted two years of my life on

you. But that's done. Can't you stand it, Jordan? Can't your enormous ego handle

the fact that I got over you? Way over you."

"This isn't about my ego, Dana." He handed her back her books. "But it sure as hell

seems to be about yours. You know where to find me when you're ready."

"I don't want to find you," she murmured when he strode away.

Damn it, it wasn't like him to walk away from a fight. She'd seen the temper on his

face, heard it in his voice. Since when had he yanked the snarling beast back and

hauled it off?

She had been primed for the argument, and now she had nowhere to vent her

spleen. That was very, very nasty.

Inside her apartment, she dumped her books on the table and headed straight for

the Ben and Jerry's. Soon she was soothing her ruffled feathers with a pint of

cookie dough straight out of the carton.

"Bastard. Sneaky bastard, getting me all riled up and skulking off. These calories are his fault."

She licked the spoon, dug for more. "But, damn, they're really good." Refreshed, she changed into sweats, brewed a pot of coffee, then settled into her favorite chair with the new book on Celtic lore.

She couldn't count the number of books on the subject

26

she'd read in the last month. But then again, to Dana, reading was every bit as

pleasurable as Ben and Jerry's and as essential to life as the next breath of air.

She surrounded herself with books at work and at home. Her living space was a

testament to her first and abiding love, with shelves jammed with books, tables

crowded with them. She saw them not only as knowledge, entertainment, comfort, even sanity, but as a kind of artful decoration.

To the casual eye, the books that streamed and flowed over shelves in nooks, on

tabletops, might look like a haphazard, even disordered, jumble. But the Librarian

in Dana insisted on a system.

She could, on her whim or on request, put her hand on any title in any room in the apartment.

She couldn't live without books, without the stories, the information, the worlds

that lived inside them. Even now, with the task ahead of her and the clock already

ticking, she fell into the words on the pages in her hands, and into the lives, the

loves, the wars, the petty grievances of the gods.

Absorbed, she jumped at the knock on her door. Blinking, she came back to reality, noted that the sun had set while she'd been visiting with Dagda, Epona, and Lug.

Book in hand, she went to answer, then lifted her eyebrows at Malory. "What's up?"

"I thought I'd swing by and see what you were up to before I headed home. I've spent the day talking to some local artists and craftspeople. I think I've got a good start on pieces for my gallery."

"Cool. Got any food on you? I'm starved." "A tin of Altoids and half a roll of Life

Savers." "That's not going to work," Dana decided. "I'm going to forage. You hungry?"

"No, go ahead. Any brilliant ideas? Anything you want Zoe and me to do?" Malory asked as she followed Dana into the kitchen.

27

"I don't know how brilliant. Spaghetti! Hot damn." Dana came out of the refrigerator with a bowl of leftover pasta. "You want?"

"Nope."

"Got some Cabernet to go with it."

"That I'll have. One glass." At home in Dana's kitchen, Malory got out wineglasses.

"What's the idea, brilliant or not?"

"Books. You know, the whole knowledge thing. And the past, present, future. If

we're talking about mine, it's all about the books."- She dug out a fork and began to

eat the pasta straight out of the bowl. "The trick is which book, or what kind of

book."

"Don't you want to heat that up?"

"What?" Baffled, Dana looked down at the spaghetti in the bowl.

"Why?"

"No reason." Malory handed Dana a glass of wine, then took her own and

wandered out to sit at the table. "A book or books makes sense, at least in part.

And it gives you a path to take. But..."

She scanned Dana's apartment. "What you yourself personally own would take

weeks to get through. Then there's what everyone else in the Valley owns, the

library, the bookstore at the mall, and so on."

"And the fact that even if I'm right, it doesn't mean the key's literally in a book.

Could be figuratively. Or it could mean something in a book points the way to the

key." Dana shrugged and shoveled in more cold spaghetti. "I said it fell short of

brilliant."

"It's a good starting point. Past, present, future." Malory pursed her lips.

"Covers a lot of ground."

"Historical, contemporary, futuristic. And that's just novels."

"What if it's more personal?" Malory leaned forward, kept her attention on Dana's

face. "It was with me. My path to the key included Flynn, my feelings for him-and

28

my feelings about myself, where I would end up, where I wanted to go. The

experiences I had-we can't call them dreams-were very personal."

"And scary." Briefly, Dana laid a hand over Malory's. "I know. But you got

through it. So will I. Maybe it is personal. A book that has some specific and

personal meaning for me."

Thoughtfully she scanned the room as she picked up her fork again.

"That's

something else that covers a lot of ground."

"I was thinking of something else. I was thinking of Jordan."

"I don't see how he's in the mix. Look," she continued even as Malory opened her

mouth, "he was part of the first round, sure. The paintings by Rowena that both he

and Brad bought. He came back to town with that painting because Flynn asked

him to. That played into it, although his part should have ended with your quest.

And his connection to Flynn, which connected him to you."

"And you, Dana."

She twirled her fork in the pasta, but her enthusiasm for it was waning.

"Not

anymore."

Recognizing the stubborn look, Malory nodded. "Okay. How about the first book

you ever read? The first that grabbed you and made you a reader."

"I don't think the magic key to the Box of Souls is going to be found in Green Eggs

and Ham" Smirking, Dana lifted her glass. "But I'll give it a look."

"What about your first grown-up book?"

"Obviously the steely wit and keen satire of Sam I Am escaped you."

She grinned,

but drummed her fingers, thinking. "Anyway, I don't remember a first. It was

always books with me. I don't remember not reading."

She studied her wine a moment, then took a quick gulp. "He dumped me. I moved

on."

Back to Jordan, Malory thought and nodded. "All right."

"That doesn't mean I don't hate him with a rare and beautiful passion, but it doesn't

drive my life. I've only seen him a handful of times in the past seven years." She

shrugged, but it came across as a hesitant jerk. "I've got my life, he's got his, and

they no longer intersect. He just happens to be buds with Flynn."

"Did you love him?"

"Yeah. Big time. Bastard."

"I'm sorry."

"Hey, it happens." She had to remind herself of that. It wasn't life or death, it didn't

send her falling headlong into a vale of tears. If a heart couldn't be broken, it

wasn't a heart to begin with.

"We were friends. When my dad married Flynn's mom, Flynn and I hit it off. Good

thing, I guess. Flynn had Jordan and Brad-they were like one body with three

heads half the time. So I got them, too."

You've still got them, Malory nearly said, but managed to keep silent.

"Jordan and I were friends, and we both really dug reading, so that was another

click. Then we got older, and things changed. You want another hit of this?" she

asked, holding up her empty glass.

"No."

"Well, I'm having one." Dana rose, got the bottle from the kitchen. "He went off to

college. He got a partial scholarship to Penn State, and both he and his mom

worked like dogs to put together the rest of the tuition and expense money. His

mom, well, she was just terrific. Zoe sort of reminds me of her."

"Really?"

"Not in the looks department, though Mrs. Hawke was really pretty, but she was

taller, and willowy-made you think of a dancer."

"She was young when she died."

30

"Yeah, only in her forties." It still brought a little pang to her heart. "It was horrible

what she went through, what Jordan went through. At the end, we were all

practically camped out at the hospital, and even then..."

She gave herself a hard shake, blew out a breath. "That's not where I was going. I

meant Zoe reminds me of how Mrs. Hawke was. It's that good-mother vibe Zoe

has. The kind of woman who knows what to do and how to do it and doesn't whine

about getting it done, and still manages to love it and the kid. She and Jordan were

tight, the way Zoe and Simon are. It was just the two of them. His father wasn't in

the picture, not as far back as I can remember, anyway."

"That must've been difficult for him."

"It would've been, I think, if his mother hadn't been who she was. She'd grab a bat

and join in a pickup Softball game as quickly as she would whip up some cookie

batter. She filled the gaps."

"You loved her too," Malory realized. "I did. We all did."

Dana sat down, sipped at her second glass of wine. "So anyway, the Hawke goes

off to college, gets two part-time jobs up there to help pay his expenses.

We didn't

see much of him the first year. He came back for summers, worked at Tony's Garage. He's a pretty decent mechanic. Palled around with Flynn and Brad when he had the chance. Four years later, he's got his degree. He did a year and a half postgrad and was already getting some short stories published. Then he came home."

She let out a long breath. "Holy Jesus, we took one look at each other, and it was like bombs exploding. I thought, What the hell is this? This my buddy Jordan. I'm not supposed to want to sink my teeth into my good buddy Jordan." She laughed, drank. "Later on, he told me he'd had the same sort of reaction.

Whoa, hold on, this is Flynn's little
31

sister. Hands off. So we danced around those bombs and each other for a couple of

months. We were either bitchy with each other or very, very polite," "And then?" Malory prompted when Dana fell silent.

"Then one night he dropped by to see Flynn, but Flynn was out on a date. And my

parents weren't home. I picked a fight with him. I had to do something with all that

heat. The next thing you know the two of us are rolling around on the living room

rug. We couldn't get enough of each other. I've never had that before or since,

that... desperation. It was incredible.

"Imagine our chagrin when the smoke cleared and the two of us were naked on Liz

and Joe's pretty Oriental carpet."

"How did you handle it?"

"Well, as I recall we lay there like the dead for a minute, then just stared at each other. A couple of survivors of a very intense war. Then we laughed our butts off and went at each other again."

She lifted her glass in a mock toast. "So. We started dating, belatedly. Jordan and

Dana, Dana and Jordan. It got to be like one word, whichever way you said it."

Oh, God, she missed that, she realized. Missed that very ultimate link.

"Nobody

ever made me laugh the way he could make me laugh. And he's the only man in

my life who's ever made me cry. So, yeah, Christ, yes, I loved that son of a bitch."

"What happened?"

"Little things, huge things. His mother died. God, nothing's ever been as, well,

monstrous as that. Even when my dad got sick, it wasn't as bad. Ovarian cancer,

and they found it too late. The operations, the treatments, the prayers, nothing

worked. She just kept slipping away. Having someone die is hard," she said softly.

"Watching them die by inches is impossible."

"I can't imagine it." Malory's eyes filled with tears. "I've never lost anyone."

32

"I don't remember losing my mother; I was too young. But I remember every day

of losing Mrs. Hawke. Maybe it broke something in Jordan. I don't know-he

wouldn't let me know. After she died, he sold their little house, all the furniture,

just about every damn thing. And he cut me loose and moved to New York to get rich and famous."

"It wasn't as cut and dried as that," Malory commented.

"Maybe not. But it felt like it. He said he had to go. That he needed something, and it wasn't here. If he was going to write-and he had to write-he had to do it his

way. He had to get out of the Valley. So that's what he did, like the two years we

were together was just a little interlude in his life."

She downed the rest of the wine in her glass. "So fuck him, and the bestsellers he rode in on."

"You may not want to hear this, at least not now. But part of the solution might be

to resolve this with him."

"Resolve what?"

"Dana." Malory laid both of her hands on Dana's. "You're still in love with him."

Her hands jerked. "I am not. I made a life for myself. I've had lovers. I have a

career-which, okay, is in the toilet right now, but I've got a phoenix about to rise

from the ashes hi the bookstore."

She stopped, hearing the way her words tumbled out. "No more wine for me if I

mix metaphors that pitifully. Jordan Hawke's old news," she said more calmly.

"Just because he was the first man I loved doesn't mean he has to be the last. I'd

rather poke my eye with a burning stick than give him the satisfaction."

"I know." Malory laughed a little, gave Dana's hands a squeeze before she released

them. "That's how I know you're still in love with him. That, and what I just saw on your face, heard in your voice when you took me through what you had together."

It was appalling. How had she looked? How had she
33

sounded? "So the wine made me sentimental. It doesn't mean-"
"It means whatever it means," Malory said briskly. "It's something you're going to have to think about, Dana, something you're going to have to weigh carefully if you really mean to do this thing. Because one way or the other, he's part of your life, and he's part of this."

"I don't want him to be," Dana managed. "But if he is, I'll deal with it. There's too much at stake for me to wimp out before I even get started."

"That's the spirit. I've got to get home."

She rose, then ran a comforting hand over Dana's hair. "Whatever you're feeling or thinking, you can tell me. And Zoe. And if there's something you need to say, if you just need someone to be here when you have nothing to say, all you have to do is call."

Dana nodded, waited until Malory was at the door. "Mai? It was like having a hole punched in my heart when he left. One hole ought to be enough for anybody's lifetime."

"You'd think. I'll see you tomorrow."

Chapter Three

THE odds of finding a magic key tucked in one of the thousands of books at the

Pleasant Valley Library were long and daunting. But that didn't mean she couldn't look.

In any case, she liked being in the stacks, surrounded by books. She could, if she let her mind open to it, hear the words murmuring from them. All those voices from people who lived in worlds both fantastic and ordinary. She could, simply by slipping a book off the shelf, slide right into one of those worlds and become anyone who lived inside it.

Magic keys and soul-sucking sorcerers, Dana thought. Incredible as they might be,

they paled for her against the power of words on a page.

But she wasn't here to play, she reminded herself as she began dutifully tidying the

stacks while keeping an eye on the resource desk a few feet away. This was an

experiment. Maybe she would put her fingers on a book and feel something-a

tingle, a hint of heat.

35

Who knew?

But she worked her way through the mythology stacks without experiencing any tingles.

Undaunted, she wandered to the section of books on ancient civilizations. The

past, she told herself. The Daughters of Glass had sprung from the ancients. Well,

who hadn't?

She worked diligently for a time, reordering books that had been misplaced. She

knew better, really she did, than to actually open the volume on ancient Britain,
but it was suddenly in her hand, and there was this section on stone circles that
swept her onto windy moors at moonrise.
Druids and chanting, balefires and the hum that was the breath of gods.
"Oh, gee, Dana. I didn't know you were off today." With her teeth going to
auto-grind, Dana shifted her gaze from the book in her hand to Sandi's overly
cheerful face. "I'm not off. I'm working the stacks."
"Really?" The big blue eyes widened. Long golden lashes fluttered. "It looked like
you were reading. I thought maybe you were on your own time, doing more
research. You've been doing a lot of research lately, haven't you? Finally starting
on your doctorate?"
With a bad-tempered little shove, Dana put the book back in place. Wouldn't it be
fun? she thought, to get the big silver scissors out of the drawer in her desk and
whack off that detestable bouncing ponytail?
She'd just bet that would wipe that bright, toothy grin off Sandi's face.
"You got the promotion, the pay raise, so what's your problem, Sandi?"
"Problem? I don't have a problem. We all know the policy about reading on the
clock. So I'm sure it just looked like you were reading instead of manning the
desk."
"The desk is covered." And when enough was enough, Dana thought, you finished
it. "You spend a lot of your
36

time worrying about what I'm doing, slinking around in the stacks behind me,
eavesdropping when I'm speaking with a patron."
Sandi's perky smile turned into a perky sneer. "I certainly do not eavesdrop."
"Bullshit," Dana said in a quiet, pleasant tone that had Sandi's dollbaby eyes going
bright with shock. "You've been stepping on my heels for weeks. You got the
promotion, I got the cut. But you're not my supervisor, you're not my boss. So you
can kiss my ass."
Though it wasn't quite as rewarding as hacking off the ponytail might have been, it
felt fabulous to just walk away, leaving Sandi sputtering.
She settled back at the desk and assisted two patrons with such good cheer and
good fellowship that both left beaming. When she answered the phone, she all but
sang out, "Pleasant Valley Library. Reference Desk. May I help you? Hey, Mr.
Foy. You're up, huh. Ah, uh-huh. Good one." She chuckled as she scribbled down
today's trivia question. "It'll take me a minute. I'll call you back."
She danced off to find the right book, flipped through it briefly in the stacks, then
carried it back to the desk to make the return call.
"Got it." She trailed down the page with her finger. "The Arctic tern migrates the
farthest annually. Up to twenty thousand miles-wow-between the Arctic and
Antarctic. Makes you wonder what's in its birdy brain, doesn't it?"
She shifted the phone as she caught sight of Sandi marching, like a damn drum

majorette, toward the desk. "Nope, sorry, Mr. Foy, no complete set of American Tourister luggage for you today. The Arctic tern nips out the long-tailed jaeger by a couple thousand miles annually. Better luck next time. Talk to you tomorrow."

She hung up, folded her hands, then lifted her eyebrows at Sandi.

"Something I can do for you?"

"Joan wants to see you upstairs." Thrusting her chin

37

in the air, Sandi looked down her tiny, perfect nose. "Immediately."

"Sure." Dana tucked her hair behind her ear as she studied Sandi. "I bet you only had one friend in elementary school, and she was just as obnoxious as you are."

She slid off the stool.

Speaking of elementary school, Dana thought as she crossed the main floor,

started up the stairs to administration, she herself felt as if she'd just gotten hauled

into the principal's office. A lowering sensation for a grown woman.

And one, she

decided, she was sick of experiencing.

Outside Joan's door, Dana took a deep breath, squared her shoulders.

She might

feel like a guilty six-year-old, but she wasn't going to look like one.

She knocked, briskly, then opened the door without waiting for a response. "You

wanted to see me?"

At her desk, Joan leaned back. Her salt-and-pepper bun was pulled into in a

no-nonsense bun that, oddly enough, flattered her.

She wore a dark vest over a white blouse that was primly buttoned to her throat.

The material hung flat, with barely a ripple to indicate there were breasts beneath it.

Rimless half-glasses dangled from a gold chain around her neck. Dana knew her shoes would be low-heeled and sturdy and as no-nonsense as the hairstyle.

She looked, Dana decided, scrawny and dull-and the very image of the cliché that kept children out of libraries in droves.

Since Joan's mouth was already set in disapproval, Dana didn't expect the meeting to be a cheerful one.

"Shut the door, please. It appears, Dana, that you continue to have difficulty

adjusting to the new policies and protocol I've implemented here."

"So, Sandi raced right up to tattle that I was actually reading a book. Of all the

horrors to commit in a public library."

38

"Your combative attitude is only one of the problems we have to deal with."

"I'm not going to stand here and defend myself for skimming a couple pages of a

book while I was working in the stacks. Part of my function is to be informed

about books, not just to point the patrons toward an area and wish them Godspeed. I do my job, Joan, and my evaluations from the previous director

were never less than exemplary."

"I'm not the previous director."

"Damn straight. Less than six weeks after you took over, you cut my, and two

other long-term employees', hours and paychecks nearly in half. And your niece

gets a promotion and a raise."

"I was hired to pull this institution out of financial decline, and that's what I'm

doing. I'm not required to explain my administrative decisions to you."

"No, you don't have to. I get it. You don't like me, I don't like you. But I don't have

to like everyone I work with or for. I can still do my job."

"It's your job to follow the rules." Joan flipped open a file. "Not to make and

receive personal phone calls. Not to use library equipment for personal business.

Not to spend twenty minutes gossiping with a patron while your duties are

neglected."

"Hold it." Baffled rage spewed into her throat like a geyser. "Just hold it one

minute. What's she doing, making daily reports on me?"

Joan flipped the file shut. "You think too much of yourself."

"Oh, I see. Not just on me. She's your personal mole, burrowing around the place

digging up infractions."

Oh, yes, Dana thought, when enough was enough you definitely finished it.

"Maybe the budget here has had its ups and downs, but this was always a friendly

place, familial. Now it's just a drag run by the gestapo commandant and her

personal weasel. So I'll do us both a favor. I quit.

39

I've got a week's sick leave and a week's vacation coming. We'll just consider that

my two weeks' notice."

"Very well. You can have your resignation on my desk by the end of your shift."

"Screw that. This is my resignation." She took a deep breath. "I'm smarter than you are, and I'm younger, stronger, and better-looking. The regular patrons know and like me- most of them don't know you, and the ones who've gotten to know you don't like you. Those are some of the reasons you've been on my ass since you took over. I'm out of here, Joan, but I'm walking out of my own accord. I lay odds that you'll be on your way out before much longer, too-only you' ll be booted out by the board."

"If you expect any sort of reference or referral- "

Dana stopped at the door. "Joan, Joan, do you want to end our relationship with

me telling you what you can do with your reference?"

Her anger carried her straight down to the employee lounge, where she gathered

her jacket and a handful of personal belongings. She didn't stop to speak to any of

her coworkers. If she didn't get out, and get out fast, she feared she would either

burst into hysterical sobs or punch her fist through the wall.

Either option would give Joan too much power.

So she walked out without a backward glance. And kept walking. She refused to

let herself think that this was the last time she would make this trip from work to

home. ,It wasn't the end of her life; it was just a corner turned.

When she felt the angry tears stinging her eyes, she dug out her sunglasses. She

wasn't about to humiliate herself by crying on the damn sidewalk.

But her breath was hitching by the time she reached her apartment door.

She

fumbled out her keys, stumbled inside, then simply sank down on the floor.

"Oh, God, oh, God, what have I done?"

She'd cut her ties. She had no job. And it would be

40

weeks before she could reasonably open the bookstore. And why did she think she

could run a bookstore? Knowing and loving books didn't make her a merchant.

She'd never worked in retail in her life, and suddenly she was going to run a retail

business?

She'd thought she was prepared for the step. Now, faced with stark reality, Dana

realized she wasn't even close to prepared.

Panicked, she leaped up, all but fell onto the phone. "Zoe? Zoe ... I just-I've got to

... Christ. Can you meet me at the place, the house?"

"Okay. Dana, what's wrong? What's the matter?"

"I just-I quit my job. I think I'm having an anxiety attack. I need ... Can you get the

keys? Can you get Malory and meet me there?"

"All right, honey. Take a deep breath. Come on, suck one in. Breathe easy. That's

it. Twenty minutes. We'll be there in twenty minutes."

"Thanks. Okay, thanks. Zoe-"

"You just keep breathing. Want me to swing by and get you?"

"No." She rubbed the temper tears away. "No, I'll meet you."

"Twenty minutes," Zoe repeated and rang off.

* * *

SHE was calmer, at least on the surface, when she pulled into the double drive in

front of the pretty frame house she'd bought with her friends. In a matter of weeks,

they'd be signing papers at settlement. Then they would begin, well, whatever it was that they were going to begin.

It was Zoe and Malory who had the big ideas as far as ambience, color schemes, paints, and posies. They'd already had their heads together over paint chips for the color of the porch, the entrance hall. And she knew Zoe

41

had been scouring flea markets and yard sales for the trash that she miraculously turned into treasure.

It wasn't that she didn't have ideas herself. She did.

She could envision in general how her section of the main floor would look when

it had been transformed into a little bookstore/cafe. Comfortable and cozy. Maybe

some good sink-into-me chairs, a few tables.

But she couldn't see the details. What should the chairs look like? What kind of

tables should she use?

And there were dozens of other things she hadn't considered when she'd jumped

into that dream of having her own bookstore. Just as, she was forced to admit,

there were things she hadn't considered when she'd, basically, told Joan to stuff it.

Impulse, pride, and temper, she thought with a sigh. A dangerous combination.

Now she was going to have to live with the results of surrendering to it.

She stepped out of the car. Her stomach was still jumpy, so she rubbed a hand

over it as she studied the house.

It was a good place. It was important to remember that. She'd liked it the minute

she'd stepped inside the door with Zoe. Even the downright terrifying experience they'd had inside it-courtesy of their nemesis, Kane-barely a week before, when Malory had found her key, didn't spoil the feel of the place. She'd never owned a house, or any other property. She should concentrate on the very adult sensation of owning a third of an actual building, and the land it stood on. She wasn't afraid of the responsibility-it was good to know that. She wasn't afraid of work, mental or physical. But she was, she realized, very afraid of failing. She walked to the porch, sat on the step, and indulged in a good wallow. She was too mired in it to do more than sit there when Malory pulled up with Zoe in the passenger seat. Malory angled her head as she climbed out.

42

"Crappy day, huh?"

"Don't come much crappier. Thanks for coming. Really."

"We did better than that." She gestured toward Zoe, and the white bakery box Zoe carried.

Overcome, Dana sniffed. "Is it chocolate?"

"We're girls, aren't we?" Sitting beside her, Zoe gave her a hard, one-armed hug,

then opened the box. "Chocolate éclairs. A big fat one for each of us."

This time, it was sentimental tears threatening to fall. "You guys are the best."

"Take a few bites, wait for the kick, then tell us about it." Malory sat on the other side, handed out napkins.

Dana soothed herself with chocolate, pastry, and cream, and-the story tumbled out between bites.

"She wanted me to quit." Scowling, she flicked her tongue at the corner of her mouth and licked off a bit of Bavarian cream. "It was some visceral animosity going on between us the minute we laid eyes on each other. Like, I dunno, maybe we were mortal enemies in a past life. Or, Jesus, married or something. It's not just that she ran the library like it was boot camp-that's bad enough-but she had it in for me, personally. And so did her little yappy dog, Sandi."

"I know it's tough, Dana. Boy, do I." Malory rubbed a sympathetic hand over Dana's shoulder. "But you were planning to resign in a few weeks anyway."

"I know, I know. But I wanted to sort of ease out. Cop the little going-away party with the staff, so it all ended on a high note. And the fact is, even with the pay cut, the salary did come in handy. More than. I could've used the extra paychecks before I walked."

"Telling her to cram it should be worth the paychecks. She's a bitch and we hate her," Zoe said loyally. "And when Indulgence is up and running, and the bookstore's the talk of the Valley, she'll stew in her own envious juices."

43

Considering, Dana pursed her lips. "That's a good one. I just panicked, I guess. I've always worked in a library. High school library, college library, then this one. And it suddenly hit me that that's done, and I'm going to be the owner of a retail business."

She rubbed her damp hands on her knees. "I don't even know how to work a cash register."

"I'll teach you," Zoe promised. "We're in this together."

"I don't want to mess it up. I don't want to mess up the key deal either."

It's just that
all this hit me at once."

Malory offered Dana the last third of her éclair. "Have a little more sugar. Then

we'll go in and start making some serious plans."

"I've got two hours before I have to be home," Zoe told her. "When we picked up

the keys, I asked the real estate agent. She said we could start on some of the basic

cosmetic work if we want to risk the time and money. We could paint the porch,

say, unless we're worried the deal won't go through."

Dana polished off the éclair. "Okay. Okay," she said with more enthusiasm. "Let's

go in and look at paint chips."

* * *

AFTER some debate, they settled on a deep ocean blue. The color, they agreed,

would make the house stand out among its neighbors and would add a touch of

class.

Since they were in the mode, they headed back to the kitchen to talk about decor

and space.

"Nothing too country," Zoe decided as she tapped her fingers on her hips. "We

want it comfortable and homey, but, well, indulgent, right? So it shouldn't be sleek

or anything, but it shouldn't be homespun either."

"Your upscale country kitchen." Nodding, Malory turned in a circle, trying to envision it. "Maybe that minty green for the walls. Nice, friendly color. A creamy white for the cabinets. Dana, you'll be using this space the most."

44

"That's okay, keep going." She waved them on. "You guys are better at this than I am."

"Well, what if we had the counters done in rose? Not pink, but stronger, then we

punch things up with art. That would flow in from the gallery section. Then we'd

set up some of the sidelines Zoe's talked about having up in the salon. The

aromatherapy products, candles. And we do something like Dana's got in the

kitchen in her apartment."

"We fill it with junk food?"

Malory glanced at Dana and laughed. "No. Books. We do like a baker's rack or

kitchen étagère over there, and we put out books and some of the craft pieces from

my gallery, some of the products from the salon. Fancy hand creams and soaps. It

unifies this communal space."

"That's good." Dana let out a breath. "It's starting to feel good again."

"It's going to be great." Zoe slid an arm around Dana's waist. "You could have

those tins and stuff of fancy teas and coffees on the counter."

"Maybe we could put in a table," Dana considered. "One of those little round ones,

with a couple of chairs. Okay. Let's write down the paints we've got so far, see if

we can decide on any others. I'll head out to HomeMakers and pick it all up."

"I think paint's going on sale next week," Zoe put in.

"Oh, yeah?" Dana's dimples flashed. "Well, I happen to have an in at HomeMakers. I'll call Brad and get us a discount today."

* * *

IT helped to have a focus, a goal. Even if it was only several gallons of paint.

If, Dana thought, the library and her life there were now her past, weren't Indulgence and the building of it her present? As far as the future went, how the

hell was she sup-

45

posed to know? But she intended to think about it and try to find a connection to

the location of the key.

It hadn't been difficult to wheedle a thirty percent discount out of Brad.

As Dana

wandered the wide aisles of the cavernous HomeMakers, she considered what else

she might be able to pick up while she had her old friend's go-ahead.

Paintbrushes, of course, and rollers. Or maybe they should try out one of those

paint sprayers. She studied one, crouching down to ponder the workings of it.

How hard could it be? And it would certainly be faster and less labor-intensive

than slopping it on the old-fashioned way.

"Unless you're thinking about becoming a house painter, that one's a little much

for you."

Jordan Hawke, she thought as a muscle in her jaw twitched. And she'd thought the

day couldn't get any crap-pier. "So, Brad took pity on you and gave you a job?" she

said without looking up. "Are you going to get to wear one of the blue denim shirts with the little house on the breast pocket?"
"I was in his office when you called kissing up to him for a price break. He asked me to come down and give you a hand because he got caught by a phone call before he could come himself."
Her hackles rose. "I don't need help to buy paint."
"You do if you're seriously considering buying that sprayer."
"I was just looking." Her mouth moved into a pout as she poked a finger at the machine. "Besides, what do you know about it?"
"Enough to know if I say too much more about it, you'll buy it just to spite me."
"That's tempting, but I'll resist," she shot back.
He reached down, cupped a hand under her elbow to lift her to her feet.
"Seems like you've had enough to deal with for one day. Heard you quit your job."

46

There was sympathy in his eyes. Not the smug and sticky kind, but a quiet understanding that soothed. "What, does Sandi report to you too?"
"Sorry, that name's not on my list." He gave her arm a careless little rub, an old gesture that both of them remembered as soon as he did it. And both of them took a half-step back. "Word travels, Stretch. You know how it is in the Valley."
"Yeah, I know how it is. I'm surprised you remember."
"I remember a lot of things. One of them is how much you loved working there."
"I don't want you to be nice to me." She turned away to stare hard at the paint

sprayer. "It's screwing up my mood."

Because he knew she would work through it better if she was angry or occupied,

he nodded. "Okay. Why don't I help you take advantage of your friend-of-the-owner discount? It's always fun to scalp Brad. Then you can verbally abuse me. That always cheers you up."

"Yeah, it does." She frowned a little, bumped the sprayer with the toe of her shoe.

"This thing doesn't look so tough."

"Let me show you some of your other options."

"Why aren't you back at Flynn's hacking out a stale plot with cardboard characters?"

"There, see, you're feeling better already."

"Have to admit."

"What we have here is an automatic paint roller system," he began, steering her toward the machine Brad had recommended to him. "It's small, user-friendly, and efficient."

"How do you know?"

"Because when Brad told me to show you this one he used those specific adjectives. Personally, I've only painted a room the old-fashioned way, and that's

been..." He trailed off. "A long time ago."

She remembered. He'd painted his mother's bedroom when she was in the hospital

the first time. Dana had helped him, cutting around the trim, keeping his spirits

up.

47

They'd painted the walls a soft, warm blue so that the room would be fresh and peaceful.

And less than three months later she was dead.

"She loved it," Dana said gently. "She loved that you did that for her."
"Yeah." As the memory was painful on too many levels, he flipped the topic back.

"Well, Brad's got a list here of handy products and tools to make your home improvement project more enjoyable."

"Okay, let's clean him out."

She had to admit that it added to the fun and interest of the expedition to have him

along. And it was easy, a little too easy, to remember why they'd once been

friends, once been lovers.

They had a way of slipping into a rhythm, of understanding short-speak and

expressions that came from a lifetime of knowing each other every bit as much as

from the two years of physical intimacy they'd shared.

"This is the color?" Jordan rubbed his chin as he studied her list.

"Island? What

kind of color is Island?"

"Greeny blue. Sort of." She handed over the paint chip. "See? What's wrong with it?"

"I didn't say anything was wrong with it. It's just not something that makes me think bookstore."

"It's not just a bookstore, it's ... Damn it." She held the sample up, she held it

down. She crossed her eyes and still couldn't envision it on the walls of her space.

"Malory picked it out. I was going to go with this off-white, and she and Zoe

jumped all over me."

"White always works."

She hissed out a breath. "See, they said I was thinking like a man. Men won't pick color. They're scared of color."

"We are not."

"What color's your living room in New York?"

He shot her a bland look. "That's entirely beside the point."

48

"I don't think so. I don't know why, but I don't think so. I'm going with this sort of greeny blue. It's just paint. It's not a lifetime commitment. And she said I should

think Bryce Canyon and Spaghetti for accents."

"Brown and yellow? Honey, that's got to be ugly."

"No, the canyon deal's sort of deep rose. A kind of pinky, brownish red -"

"Pinky, brownish red," he repeated, grinning. "Very descriptive."

"Shut up. And the other's sort of cream." She fanned out the samples Zoe and

Malory had marked. "Hell, I don't know. I think I'm a little scared of color myself."

"You're sure as hell not a man."

"Thank God for that. Mai's going with this deal called Honeycomb.

Zoe's is called

Begonia, which I don't get because begonias are pink or white, and this is more

like purple."

She pressed her fingers just over her right eye. "I think all this color's making my

head hurt. Anyway, Zoe's already figured the square footage and the gallons per.

Where's my list?"

He handed it back to her. "Brad was wondering why Zoe didn't come with you."

"Hmm? Oh, she had to get home to Simon." She studied the list, began to

calculate, then glanced up. "Why?"

"What?"

"Why was he wondering?"

"Why do you think?" He looked over her shoulder at the list, surprised when she

turned it over and he saw that it continued on the back of the sheet.

"Jesus, you're going to need a flatbed. Then Brad took a trip back to high school

and asked me to ask you if Zoe had said anything about him."

"No, she didn't, but I'd be happy to pass her a note for him in study hall tomorrow."

"I'll let him know."

49

They loaded up the paint, the supplies, the equipment. Dana blessed Brad at

checkout when even with the discount the total made her gulp. But it wasn't until

she was outside that she realized the real dilemma.

"How the hell am I going to fit all this in my car?"

"You're not. We're going to fit it into your car and mine."

"Why didn't you say something about me buying more than I could handle when I

was loading up in there?"

"Because you were having fun. Where do you want to store all this stuff?"

"Jeez." Baffled with herself, she scooped a hand through her hair. "I didn't think

about it. I got caught up."

And, he thought, it had been a pleasure to watch her get caught up-and forget she

hated him.

"I can't store all this at my place, and I didn't think to see if we could keep the keys

and store it at the building. What the hell am I going to do with it?"

"Flynn's got plenty of room at his place."

"Yeah." She sighed. "Yeah, he does. I guess that's the way it'll have to be. He can't get pissed, because Malory will just bat her eyelashes and turn him into putty."

They divvied up, loaded up. The drive back to Flynn's gave her time to wonder how they'd managed to be in each other's company for the best part of an hour without a fight.

He hadn't been a jerk, which, she decided, was a rare thing. And, she was forced to admit, she hadn't been one either. Equally rare when

Jordan was involved.

Maybe, just maybe, they could manage to coexist, even cooperate, for the short

term. If, as everyone else insisted, he was part of the quest, she needed him around.

Added to that, he had a good brain and a fluid imagination. He could be more than

an annoyance through this. He could be an actual asset.

When they arrived at Flynn's, she had to concede that it
50

helped to have a man around who was willing to play pack mule with a dozen

gallons of paint and the supplies that went with it.

"Dining room," she said, straining a little under the load she carried. "He never uses it."

"He's going to." Jordan wound his way through the house, veered off into the

dining room. "Malory has major plans."

"She always does. She makes him happy."

"No question about that." He headed back out for the next load. "Lily put some

serious holes in his ego," he added, referring to Flynn's ex-fiancee. "It wasn't just his ego." She pulled out a bag loaded with extra paint rollers, brushes, shiny metal pans. "She hurt him. When somebody dumps you and runs off, it hurts."

"Best thing that could've happened to him."

"That isn't the issue." She could feel the resentment, the hurt, the anger starting to brew in her belly. Struggling to ignore it, she hauled out more cans. "The issue is pain, betrayal, and loss."

He said nothing as they carried the rest of the supplies to the dining room. Nothing until they set them down, and he turned to face her. "I didn't dump you." She could actually feel the hair on the back of her neck rise. "Not every statement I make involves you."

"I had to go," he continued. "You had to stay. You were still in college, for Christ's sake."

"That didn't stop you from getting me into bed."

"No, it didn't. Nothing could have. I had a hunger for you, Dana. There were times I felt like I'd starve to death if I couldn't get a bite of you."

She stepped back, gave him an up-and-down study. "Looks like you've been eating well enough the last few years."

"Doesn't mean I stopped thinking about you. You meant something to me."

51

"Oh, go to hell." It didn't explode out of her, but was said flatly, which gave it more power. "Meant something to you? A goddamn pair of shoes can mean

something to you. I loved you."

If she'd delivered a bare-knuckled punch to his face, he'd have been no less

shocked. "You ... you never said that. You never once said the L word to me."

"Because you were supposed to say it first. The guy's supposed to say it first."

"Hold on just a minute. Is that a rule?" Panic was trickling down the back of his

throat like acid. "Where's it written down?"

"It just is, you stupid jerk. I loved you, and I'd have waited, or I'd've gone with you.

But you just said, Listen, Stretch, I'm pulling up stakes and going to New York.

It's been fun, see you around."

"That's not true, Dana. It wasn't like that."

"Close enough. Nobody's ever hurt me like that. You'll never get the chance to do

it again-and you know what, Hawke? I'd've made a man out of you."

She turned on her heel and walked out.

Chapter Four

BEING alone was something Jordan did very well, under most circumstances.

When he was working, thinking about working, thinking about not working, he

liked to fold himself into the isolation of his SoHo loft:

Then, the life, the noise, the movement and color on the street outside his

windows were a kind of film he could watch or ignore depending on his mood.

He liked seeing it all through the glass, more, very often more, than he liked being

a part of it.

New York had saved him, in a very real way. It had forced him to survive, to

become, to live like a man-not someone's son, someone's friend, another student,
but a man who had only himself to rely on. It had pushed and prodded him with its
impatient and sharp fingers, reminding him on a daily basis during that jittery first
year that it didn't really give a goddamn whether he sank or swam.
He'd learned to swim.

53

He'd learned to appreciate the noise, the action, the press of humanity. He liked its selfishness and its generosity and its propensity for flipping the bird to
the rest of the world.

And the more he'd learned, the more he'd observed and adjusted, the more he'd

realized that at the core he was just a small-town boy.

He would forever be grateful to New York.

When work was upon him, he could drop into that world. Not the one outside his

window, but the one inside his own head. Then it wasn't like a film at all, but more

like life than life itself for however many hours it gripped him.

He'd learned the difference between those worlds, had come to appreciate the

subtleties and scopes of them in a way he knew he might never have done if he

hadn't stripped away the safety nets of the .old and thrown himself headlong into

the new.

Writing had never become routine for him, but remained a constant surprise. He

was always surprised at how much fun it was, once it all got moving.

And never

failed to be surprised at how bloody hard it was. It was like having an intense,

frustrating love affair with a capricious, gorgeous, and often mean-spirited woman.

He loved every moment of it.

Writing had carried him through the worst of his grief when he'd lost his mother. It

had given him direction, purpose, and enough aggravation to pull himself out of the mire.

It had given him joy and bitterness, and great personal satisfaction.

Beyond that, it

had provided him with a kind of financial security he'd never known or really

expected to know.

Anyone who said money didn't matter had never had to count the coins that fell

between the cushions of the couch.

He was alone now, with the afterburn of Dana's words

54

still singeing the air. He couldn't enjoy the solitude, couldn't fold himself into it or

into his work.

A man was never so lonely, he thought, as when he was surrounded by the past.

There was no point in going out for a walk. Too many people who knew him

would stop and speak, have questions, make comments. He couldn't lose himself

in the Valley as he could in New York.

Which was one of the reasons he'd bolted when and how he had. And one of the

reasons he'd come back.

So, he would go for a drive, get away from the echoes still bouncing off the walls.

I loved you.

Jesus! Jesus, how could he not have known? Had he been that clueless-
or had she
been that self-contained?
He walked out and climbed into his Thunderbird, gunned the engine. He
felt like
speed. A long, fast ride to no particular destination.
He punched in the CD player, cranked it up. He didn't care what pumped
out, as
long as it was loud. Clapton's blistering guitar rode with him out of
town.
He had known he'd hurt Dana all those years ago. But he'd assumed the
nip had
been to her ego, exactly where he thought he'd aimed; He'd known he
pissed her
off-she made that crystal-clear-but he assumed that was pride.
If he had known she loved him, he'd have found a way to break things
off more
gently.
Wouldn't he?
Christ, he hoped so. They'd been friends. Even when they had been
consumed
with and by each other, they'd been friends. He would never deliberately
wound a
friend. He'd been no good for her, that's what it came down to. He'd been
no good
for anybody at that time in his life. She was better off that he had ended
it.
He headed for the mountains and began the steep, twisty climb.
55
But she'd loved him. There was little to nothing he could do about that
now. He
wasn't at all sure there was anything he could have done at the time. He
wasn't
ready for the Big Love then. He wouldn't have known how to define it,
what to

think about it.

Hell, he hadn't been able to think at all when it came to Dana. After one look at her

when he'd come home from college, every single thought of her had shot straight

to his glands.

It had terrified him.

He could smile over that now. His initial shock at his own reaction to her, his

overwhelming guilt that he was fantasizing about the sister of his closest friend.

He'd been horrified, and fascinated, and ultimately obsessed.

Tall, curvy, sharp-tongued Dana Steele, with her big, full bodied laugh, her

questing mind, her punch-first temper.

Everything about her had pulled at him.

Damn if it still didn't.

When he'd seen her again on this trip back, when she yanked open the door of

Flynn's house and stood there snarling at him, the sheer want for her had blown

straight through him.

Just as her sheer dislike for him had all but taken off his head.

If they could work their way around to being friends again, to finding that

connection, that affection that had always been between them, maybe they could

work their way forward to something more.

To what, he couldn't say. But he wanted Dana back in his life.

And, there was no point in denying it, he wanted her back in his bed.

They'd made progress toward friendship during that shopping stint.

They'd been

easy with each other for a while, as if the years between hadn't happened.

But, of course, they had. And as soon as he and Dana had remembered those years, the progress had taken an abrupt turn and stomped away hi a huff. So now he had a mission, Jordan decided. He had to find a way to win her back.

Friend and lover-in whatever order suited them both best. The search for the key had, among other things, given him an opening. He intended to use it.

When he realized that he'd driven to Warrior's Peak, he stopped, pulled to the side of the road.

He remembered climbing that high stone wall as a teenager with Brad and Flynn.

They had camped in the woods, with a hijacked six-pack that none of them was old enough to drink.

The Peak was untenanted then, a big, fanciful, spooky place. The perfect place to fascinate a trio of boys with a couple of beers hi them.

A high, full moon, he recalled as he climbed out of the car. A black-glass sky and

just enough wind, just a hint of wind, to stir the leaves and whisper.

He could see it all now, as clearly as he'd seen it then. Maybe more clearly, he

thought, amused at himself. He was older, and stone-cold sober, and he had-admittedly- added a few flourishes to the memory.

He liked to think of the scene with a layer of fog drifting over the ground, and a

moon so round and white it looked carved into the glass of the sky. Stars sharp as

the points of darts. The low, haunting call of an owl, and the rustle of night prey in

the high grass. In the distance, with an echo that rolled through the night, the

baying of a dog.

He'd added those beats when he used that house and that night hi his first major book.

But for Phantom Watch there'd been one element of that night he hadn't had to imagine. Because it had happened. Because he'd seen it.

57

Even now, as a man past thirty with none of the naïveté" of the boy left in him, he believed it.

She'd walked along the parapet, under the hard, white moon, sliding in and out of

shadows like a ghost, with her hair flying, her cape-surely it had been a cape-billowing.

She'd owned the night. He'd thought that then and he thought it now. She had been the night.

She'd looked at him, Jordan remembered as he wandered to the iron gates, as he

stared through them at the great stone house on the rise. He hadn't been able to see

her face, but he'd known she looked down, straight into his eyes.

He'd felt the punch of it, the power, like a blow meant to awaken rather than to harm.

His mind had sizzled from it, and nothing-not the beer, not his youth, not even the

shock-had been able to dull the thrill.

She'd looked at him, Jordan remembered again as he scanned the parapet. And she'd known him.

Flynn and Brad hadn't seen her. By the time his mind had clicked back into gear

and he shouted them over, she was gone.

It had spooked them, of course. Deliciously. The way sightings of ghosts and fanciful creatures are meant to.

Though years later, when he wrote of her, he made her a ghost, he'd known

then-he knew now-that she was as alive as he.

"Whoever you were," he murmured, "you helped me make my mark. So, thanks."

He stood there, hands in his pockets, peering through the bars. The house was part of his past, and oddly, he'd considered making it part of his future. He'd been

toying with calling to see if it was available just days before Flynn had contacted

him about the portrait of the young Arthur of Britain. He'd bought that painting on

impulse five years ago at the gallery where Malory used to work, though he hadn't

met her then. Not only had it been a major element

58

of Malory's quest, but they'd discovered the painting, along with The Daughters of

Glass and one Brad had bought separately had all been painted by Rowena, Jordan

thought, centuries ago.

New York, his present, had served its purpose for him. He'd been ready for a

change. Ready to come home. Then Flynn had made it so very easy.

It gave him the opportunity to come back, test the waters, and his feelings. He'd

known, this time he'd known, as soon as he saw the majestic run of the Appalachians, that he wanted them back.

This time-surprise-he was back to stay:

He wanted those hills. The riot of them in fall, the lush green of them in summer.

He wanted to stand and see them frozen in white, so still and regal, or
hazed with
the tender touch of spring.

He wanted the Valley, with its tidy streets and tourists. The familiarity
of faces
that had known him since his youth, the smell of backyard barbecues
and the
snippets of local gossip.

He wanted his friends, the comfort and the joy of them. Pizza out of the
box, a
beer on the porch, old jokes that no one laughed at the same way a
childhood
friend did.

And he still wanted that damn house, Jordan realized with a slow,
dawning smile.

He wanted it now every bit as much as he had when he was a sixteen-
year-old
dreamer with whole worlds yet to be explored.

So, he would bide his time there-he was cagier than he'd been at sixteen.
And he

would find out what Rowena and Pitte planned to do with the place
when they
moved on.

To wherever they moved on.

So, maybe the house was both his past and his future.

He ran bits of Rowena's clue through his head. He was part of Dana's
past, and like

it or not, he was part of her present. Very probably he would be part-one
way or
another-of her future.

59

So what did he, and the Peak, have to do with her quest for the key?

And wasn't it incredibly self-serving to assume that he had anything to
do with it.

"Maybe," he said quietly to himself. "But right at the moment, I don't see a damn thing wrong with that."

With one last look at the house, he turned and walked back to his ear. He would go back to Flynn's and spend some time thinking it through, working out the angles.

Then he would present them to Dana, whether she wanted to hear them or not.

* * *

BRADLEY Vane had some plans and plots of his own. Zoe was a puzzlement to him. Prickly and argumentative one minute, scrupulously polite the next. He

would knock, and the door to her would crack open. He could detect glimmers of humor and sweetness, then the door would slam shut in his face with a blast of cold air.

He'd never had a woman take an aversion to him on sight. It was especially galling that the first one who did happened to be the one he was so outrageously attracted to.

He hadn't been able to get her face out of his mind for three years, since he'd first seen After the Spell, the painting he'd bought-the second one Rowena had painted of the Daughters of Glass.

Zoe's face on the goddess who slept, three thousand years, in a coffin of glass.

However ridiculous it was, Brad had fallen in love at first sight with the woman in the portrait.

The woman in reality was a much tougher nut.

But Vanes were known for their tenacity. And their determination to win.

If she'd come into the store that afternoon, he could and would have rearranged his schedule and taken her through. It would've given him the opportunity to spend
60

some time with her, while keeping it all practical and friendly.

Of course, you'd think that when her car broke down and he happened by and

offered her a lift, that interlude would have been practical and friendly.

Instead she'd gotten her back up because he pointed out the flaws in her plan to try

to fix the car while wearing a dinner dress, and he, understandably, had refused to

mess with the engine himself.

He'd offered to call a mechanic for her, hadn't he? Brad thought, getting riled up

again at the memory. He'd stood there debating with her for ten minutes, thus

ensuring that whatever she did they would both be late to the Peak.

And when she grudgingly accepted the ride finally, she spent every minute of it in

an ice-cold funk.

He was absolutely crazy about her.

"Sick," he muttered as he turned the corner to her street. "You're a sick man,

Vane."

Her little house sat tidily back from the road on a neat stamp of lawn.

She'd

planted fall flowers along the sunny left side. The house itself was a cheerful

yellow with bright white trim. A boy's red bike lay on its side in the front yard,

reminding him that she had a son he'd yet to catch sight of.

Brad pulled his new Mercedes behind her decade-old hatchback.
He walked back to the cargo area and hauled out the gift he hoped would
turn the
tide in his favor.

He carted it to the front door, then caught himself running a nervous
hand through
his hair.

Women never made him nervous.

Annoyed with himself, he knocked briskly.

It was the boy who opened it, and for the second time in his life, Brad
found

himself dazzled by a face. He looked like his mother-dark hair, tawny
eyes, pretty,

pointed features. The dark hair was mussed, the eyes cool
61

with suspicion, but neither detracted a whit from the exotic good looks.

Brad had enough young cousins, assorted nieces and nephews, to be able
to peg

the kid at around eight or nine. Give him another ten years, Brad
thought, and this

one would have to beat the coeds off with a stick.

"Simon, right?" Brad offered an I'm-harmless-you-can-trust-me grin.

"I'm Brad

Vane, a friend of your mom's." Sort of. "She around?"

"Yeah, she's around." Though the boy gave Brad a very quick up-and-
down

glance, Brad had the certain sensation he'd been studied carefully and
thoroughly,

and the jury was still out. "You gotta wait out there, 'cause I'm not
allowed to let

anybody in if I don't know who they are."

"No problem."

The door shut in his face. Like mother, like son, Brad thought, then
heard the boy
shout.

"Mom! There's this guy at the door. He looks like a lawyer or something."

"Oh, Jesus," Brad mumbled and cast his eyes to heaven.

Moments later the door opened again. Zoe's expression changed from puzzlement

to surprise to mild irritation in three distinct stages.

"Oh. It's you. Um... is there something I can do for you?"

You could let me nibble my way up your neck to the back of your ear for a start,

Brad thought, but kept his easy smile in place. "Dana was in the store this

afternoon, picking up some supplies."

"Yes. I know." She tucked a dishcloth in the waistband of her jeans, let the tail

hang down her hip. "Did she forget something?"

"Not exactly. I just thought you might be able to use this." He lifted the gift he'd

leaned against the side of the house, then had the pleasure of seeing her blink in

surprise an instant before she laughed.

62

Really laughed. He loved the sound of it, the way it danced over her face, into her eyes.

"You brought me a stepladder?"

"An essential tool for any home or business improvement project."

"Yes, it is. I have one." Obviously realizing how ungracious that sounded, she

flushed and hurried on. "But it's ... old. And we can certainly use another. It was

really thoughtful of you."

"We of HomeMakers appreciate your business. Where would you like me to put this?"

"Oh, well." She glanced behind her, then seemed to sigh. "Why don't you just bring it in here? I'll figure that out later." She stepped back, bumped into the boy who was hovering at her back.

"Simon, this is Mr. Vane. He's an old friend of Flynn's."

"He said he was a friend of yours."

"Working on that." Brad carried the stepladder into the house. "Hi, Simon. How's it going?"

"It's going okay. How come you're wearing a suit if you're carrying ladders around?"

"Simon."

"Good question." Brad ignored Zoe and concentrated on the boy. "I had a couple of meetings earlier today. Suits are more intimidating."

"Wearing them sucks. Mom made me wear one to Aunt Joleen's wedding last year.

With a tie. Bogus."

"Thanks for that fashion report." Zoe hooked an arm around Simon's throat and made him grin.

Then they both grinned, at each other, and Brad's eyes were dazzled.

"Homework?"

"Done. Video game time."

"Twenty minutes."

"Forty-five."

"Thirty."

63

"Sweet!" He wriggled free, then bolted across the room to the TV.

Now that her hands were no longer full of boy, Zoe didn't know what to do with

them. She laid one on the ladder. "It's a really nice stepladder. The fiberglass ones

are so light and easy to work with."

"Quality with value-HomeMakers' bywords."

The sounds of a ballpark abruptly filled the tiny living room behind her.

"It's his

favorite," Zoe managed. "He'd rather play baseball-virtual or in real life-
than

breathe." She cleared her throat, wondered what the hell she was
supposed to do

next. "Ah ... can I get you something to drink?"

"Sure, Whatever's handy."

"Okay." Damn it. "Just, um, have a seat. I'll be back in a minute."

What to do with Bradley Vane? she asked herself as she hurried back to
the

kitchen. In her house. Plunked down in his expensive shoes in her living
room. An

hour before dinner.

She stopped herself, pressed her hands to her eyes. It was okay, it was
perfectly all

right. He'd done something very considerate, and she would reciprocate
by

bringing him something to drink, having a few minutes of conversation.

She never knew what she was supposed to say to him. She didn't
understand men

like him. The kind of man who came from serious money. Who'd done
things and

had things and gone places to get more.

And he made her so stupidly nervous and defensive.

Should she take him a glass of wine? No, no, he was driving, and she
didn't have

any really good wine anyway. Coffee? Tea?

Christ.

At her wits' end, she opened the refrigerator. She had juice, she had
milk.

Here, Bradley Charles Vane IV, of the really rich and

important Pennsylvania Vanes, have a nice glass of cow juice, then be on your way.

She blew out a breath, then dug a bottle of ginger ale out of a cupboard. She took

out her nicest glass, checked for water spots, then filled it with ice. She added the

ginger ale, careful to keep it a safe half inch below the rim.

She tugged at the hem of the sweatshirt she'd tossed on over jeans, looked down

resignedly at the thick gray socks she wore in lieu of shoes, and hoped she didn't

smell of the brass cleaner she'd been using to attack the tarnish on an umbrella

stand she'd picked up at the flea market.

Suit or no suit, she thought as she squared her shoulders, she wouldn't be intimidated in her own home. She would take him his drink, speak politely,

hopefully briefly, then show him out.

No doubt he had more exciting things to do than sit in her living room drinking

ginger ale and watching a nine-year-old play video baseball.

She carried the glass down the hall, then stopped and stared.

Bradley Charles Vane IV wasn't watching Simon play. He was, to her amazement,

sitting on the floor in his gorgeous suit, playing with her son.

"Two strikes, baby. You are doomed." With a cackle, Simon wiggled his butt and

prepared for the next pitch.

"Dream on, kid. See my man on third? He's about to score."

She stepped farther into the room, but neither of them noticed her as the ball

whistled toward the plate and the bat cracked against virtual cowhide.

"He's got it, he's got it, he's got it," Simon said in a kind of whispered chant.

"Yeah, yeah, shagged that sucker."

"And the runner tags," Brad said. "Watch him fly, heading for home.

Here comes

the throw... and he slides, and..."

Safe! the home base ump decreed.

"Oh, yeah." Brad gave Simon a quick elbow nudge. "One to zip, pal."

61

"Not bad. For an old guy." Simon chuckled. "Now prepare to be humiliated."

"Excuse me. I brought you some ginger ale."

"Time out." Brad twisted around to smile up at her. "Thanks. Do you mind if we

play out the inning?"

"No. Of course not." She set the glass on the coffee table, and wondered what she

should do now. "I'll just be back in the kitchen. I need to start dinner."

When his eyes stayed so direct and easy on hers, she heard--with some horror--the

words tumbling out of her mouth. "You're welcome to stay. It's just chicken."

"That'd be great."

He swiveled back around to resume the game.

Mental note, Brad thought: Forget the roses and champagne. Home improvement

supplies are the key to this particular lady's lock.

* * *

WHILE Zoe was standing in her kitchen wondering how the hell she was going to

turn her humble chicken into something worthy of a more sophisticated palate,

Dana was soothing her ego with takeout pizza.

She hadn't meant to tell him. Ever. Why give him one more thing to smirk at her

about?

But he hadn't smirked, she admitted, washing down the pizza with cold beer. In fact, he'd looked as though she'd put a bullet dead center of his forehead. Neither could she claim he'd looked pleased or puffed up about the knowledge that she'd been in love with him. The fact of it was, he'd looked shocked, then sorry. Oh, God, maybe that was worse. She sulked over the pizza. Though she had her evening book open on the table beside her, she hadn't read a single word. She was just going to have to deal with this, she told herself.

66

She couldn't afford to obsess about Jordan. Not only because she had other things that should occupy her time and her thoughts, but it just wasn't healthy. Since it was clear he was going to hang around for several weeks, and there was no avoiding him unless she avoided Flynn and Brad, they would be seeing each other regularly. And if she accepted all that had happened in the last month, all she'd learned, she was going to have to accept that Jordan had been meant to come back. He was a part of it all. And damn it, he could be useful. He had a good brain, one that picked up on and filed away details. It was one of the skills that made him such a strong writer. Oh, she hated to admit that one. She hoped her tongue would fall out before she spoke those words to him. But he had such talent.

He'd chosen that talent over her, and that still hurt. But if he could help her find the key, she would have to put that hurt away. At least temporarily. She could always kick his ass later. Mollified, she ate some more pizza. Tomorrow she would get a fresh start. She had the whole day, the whole week, the whole month to do whatever she felt needed to be done. There'd be no need to set the alarm, dress for work. She could spend the whole day in her pajamas if she wanted to, digging into her research, outlining a plan, surfing the Net for more data. She would contact Zoe and Malory and set up another summit meeting. They worked well together. Maybe they'd start to work on the building. Physical labor could spark mental acuity. The first key had been hidden, in a manner of speaking, in the building they were buying. Of course, Malory had

67

had to paint the key into existence before she could retrieve it from the painting. Maybe the second, or at least the link to the second, was in the house as well. In any case, it was a plan. Something solid to get her teeth into. She shoved the pizza aside and rose to phone Malory first. With plans to meet for a full day's painting set, she phoned Zoe. "Hey. It's Dana. Just got off the phone with Mai. We're going to start the great transformation at the house tomorrow. Nine o'clock. Malory voted for eight, but

there's no way in hell I'm getting up that early when I'm not drawing an actual paycheck."

"Nine's fine. Dana." Her voice dropped to a hissing whisper. "Bradley's here."

"Oh. Okay, I'll let you go, then. See-"

"No, no. What am I supposed to do with him?"

"Gee, Zoe, I don't know. What do you want to do with him?"

"Nothing." Her voice went up a notch before lowering again. "I don't know how

this happened. He's out in the living room playing video baseball with Simon, in a suit."

"Simon's wearing a suit?" Dana tucked her tongue in her cheek. "Boy, things're pretty formal at your house."

"Stop it." But she laughed a little. "He's wearing a suit. Bradley. He came to the

door with a stepladder, and before I knew-"

"With a what? What for? To clean out your gutters? That was not a euphemism, by

the way. But, come to think of it, it'd be a pretty good one."

"He gave it-the stepladder-to me-to us-" she corrected quickly. "For the painting

and stuff. He thought we could use it."

"That was nice of him. He's a nice guy."

68

"That's not the point! What am I supposed to do with this chicken?"

"Brad brought you a chicken?"

"No." There was helpless, hooting laughter over the line. "Why would anyone

bring me a chicken?"

"I was just wondering the same thing."

"I have chicken breasts defrosted, for dinner. What am I going to do with them

now?"

"I'd try cooking them. Jeez, Zoe, relax. It's just Brad. Throw the chicken in a pan,

rustle up some rice or potatoes, whatever, add something green and toss it on a

plate. He's not fussy."

"Don't tell me he's not fussy." She went back to the hissing whisper.

"We don't do

cordon bleu in this house. I don't even know for sure what cordon bleu means.

He's wearing an Audemars Piguet. Do you think I don't know what an Audemars

Piguet is?"

It was fascinating, really, Dana decided, to realize her old friend Brad turned a

sensible woman like Zoe into a raving lunatic. "Okay, I'll bite. What is an

Audemars Piguet and is it really sexy?"

"It's a watch. A watch that costs more than my house. Or damn near. Never mind."

There was a long, long sigh. "I'm making myself crazy, and it's just stupid."

"I can't argue with you about that."

"I'll see you tomorrow."

Shaking her head, Dana hung up. Now she had one more thing to look forward to

in the morning. And that was hearing all about how Zoe and Brad handled a

chicken dinner.

But for now, she was switching gears. She was going to try out her tub book and a

long, hot, soaking bath.

Chapter Five

SHE decided to make the bath an event. The first pure luxury of unemployment.

Might as well celebrate it, Dana told herself, as cry over it. She went for mango for that tropical sensation, and dumped a generous amount of the scented bubble bath under the running water. She lit candles, then decided a bottle of beer didn't quite measure up to the rest of the ambience. Already naked, she headed into the kitchen, poured the beer into a glass. Back hi the bath, she anchored her hair on top of her head, then, for the hell of it, slopped on some of the hydrating facial cream Zoe had talked her into. It couldn't hurt. Realizing she was missing an important element, she went out to flip through her CDs, found an old Jimmy Buffett. Time to go to the islands, she decided, and with Jimmy already nibbling on sponge cake, she sank with a long sigh into the hot, fragrant water.

70 ROBERTS

For the first five minutes she simply basked, let the hot water, the scents, the absolute bliss do their work. A big white ball hearing Joan's irritated face bounced down a long incline, slapping into rocks, picking up grit. The face took on a shocked expression as it rolled straight off the edge of a cliff. A bouncy blond ponytail followed it. Tension oozed away, drop by drop. "Bye-bye," Dana murmured, well satisfied. She roused herself to rinse away the facial cream with a washcloth, and reminded herself to put on some moisturizer when she got out of the tub. She frowned at her toes, turned her head this way and that. Maybe it was time for

a pedicure, ending it with some sassy, liberating color suitable for the recently unemployed and the soon-to-be entrepreneur. It was coming in damn handy having a stylist for a friend and business partner. Ready for stage two, she decided, and picked up her book from the edge of the tub. With a sip of beer, the turn of a page, Dana slipped into the story. The tropical setting, the romance and intrigue, perfectly suited her needs. She drifted along with the words, began to see the deep blue shine of the water, the sugar-white sparkle of the sand. She felt the warm, moist, air flutter over her skin and smelled the sea, the heat, the strong perfume of the lilies potted on the wide veranda. She stepped off sunbaked wood and onto sunbaked sand. Gulls cried as they wheeled overhead, and the sound of them echoing was a kind of chant. She felt the powdery grit of the sand under her bare feet, and the teasing way her thin silk wrap fluttered around her legs. She walked to the water, then along its edge, basking in the beauty of the solitude. She could go wherever she wanted, or nowhere at all.

71

All those years of responsibility and work, of schedules and obligations, were behind her now. Why had she ever thought they mattered so much? The water rolled toward shore, foamy lace at its edges, then waltzed back into its own heart with a sigh. She saw the silver flash and leap of dolphins at play, and

beyond, so far beyond, the delicate line of the horizon.
It was perfect and peaceful and lovely. And so liberating to know she
was
completely alone.
She wondered why she'd ever felt compelled to work so hard, to worry,
to care
about what should be or had to be done, when all she really wanted was
to be
alone in a world of her own choosing.
A world, she understood without any sense of surprise or wonder, that
she could
change with a thought or on a whim.
There was no heartache unless she wished for it, no company unless she
created it.
Her life could spin out- color and movement and quiet and sound-like
the pages of
a book that never had to end.
If she wanted a companion, she had only to imagine one. Lover or
friend.
But really, she needed no one but herself. People brought problems,
responsibilities, baggage, needs that were not her own. Life was so much
simpler
in solitude.
Her lips curved with contentment as she wandered along the sickle curve
of beach
where the only footprints were hers, toward the lush green shade of
palms and
trees heavy with fruit.
Cooler here, because she wished it to be. Soft, soft grass beneath her
feet,
sprinkles of sunlight through the fronds overhead, and the sharp, bright
flash of
birds with feathers the rich colors of jewels.
She plucked fruit from a branch-a mango, of course- and took the first
sweet, juicy

bite.

It was chilled, almost icy cold, just the way she liked it best, rather than warmed

by that streaming sun.

72

She lifted her arms, saw they were tanned a smooth and dusky gold, and when she

looked down she grinned to see her toes were painted a bold and celebrational

pink.

Exactly right, she realized. That's exactly what I wanted.

Her mind began to wander as she roamed through the glade, watched goldfish

dance in a pool of clear blue water. She wanted the fish to be red as rubies, and

they were. Green as emeralds, and they became so.

The wonderful flash of bright color in the water made her laugh, and at the sound

of it, birds-more jewels- glided into that perfect bowl of sky.

This could be her forever place, she realized, changing only as she wished it to

change. Here, she would never hurt again, or need, or be disappointed.

Everything would always be just the way she wanted it to be ... until she wanted it

to be different.

She lifted the mango again, and a thought passed through her mind: But what will

I do here, day after day?

She seemed to hear voices, just the murmur of them, far off. Even as the breeze

kicked up, whisked them away, she turned, looked back.

Flowers tangled on lush green vines. Fruit dripped, glossy as gems, from the

delicate branches of trees. The sound of the surf, a seductive whisper, shivered

through the air.

She stood, alone, in the paradise she had made.

"No"

She said it out loud, as a kind of test.

This isn't right. This isn't who I am, isn't what I want.

The fruit she held slipped out of her fingers and hit the ground at her feet with an

ugly splat. Her heart jolted in her chest as she saw it was rotten at the core.

The colors around her were too harsh, she realized, the textures too flat.

Like a

stage set, like standing on an elaborate set built for an endless play.

"This is a trick." Angry wasps began to buzz around the spoiled fruit.

"This is a

lie!"

73

As she shouted it, the blue sky turned to boiling black. Wind screamed, ripping

fronds, hurling flowers and fruit. The air turned bitterly cold.

She ran, with icy rain stinging her face, plastering the silk against her body.

In this wild and wicked world, trick or no trick, she knew she was no longer alone.

-

She ran, through the hurricane scream of the storm, through the lashing, razor-edged fronds that seemed to snatch at her arms and legs like

grasping

fingers.

Breathless, terrified, she spilled out onto the beach. The sea was a nightmare,

walls of oily black water rising up, pounding down, eating away at the land bite by

greedy bite. Palm trees crashed down behind her, and the white sand caved in on

itself, like a world collapsing.

Even in the dark, in the cold, she felt the shadow spread over her. The pain shocked her to her feet again, had her stumbling forward as she felt something ripping inside her. Ripping out of her. Gathering all her strength, all her will, she made her choice, and plunged into the killing sea.

* * *

SHE reared up, gasping, shuddering, a scream tearing at her throat. And found herself sitting up in her tub, chilly water sloshing over the side. Her book was floating, her candles pooling in their own wax. Panicked, she crawled out of the tub, and for a moment simply curled shivering on the bath mat. With her teeth chattering, she forced herself up, grabbed a towel and wrapped it around her. Suddenly the thought of being naked only added to the layers of fear. She stumbled out of the bathroom, her heart still heaving inside her chest, to fumble a robe out of her closet. She'd wondered if she would ever be warm again.

74

He'd pulled her in. Kane. The dark sorcerer who had challenged the king of the gods and had stolen the souls of his daughters. Because they were half mortal, Dana thought, and that offended his sensibilities. And because he wanted to rule. He had conjured the Box of Souls with its triple locks, and had forged the three

keys that no god could turn. A kind of nasty joke, she thought as she struggled to catch her breath. A rude thumbing of his nose at the god who had had the bad taste to fall in love with a mortal woman. The spell Kane had cast behind the Curtain of Dreams had held for three thousand years. Which meant he had plenty of punch-and he'd just given her a good hard shot to remind her that he was watching. He'd slipped into her head and pulled her into one of her own fantasies. How long? she wondered, hugging herself for warmth. How long had she been lying there, naked, helpless, out of her own "body?" It was dark now, fully dark, and she switched on the Light for fear of what might wait in the shadows. But the room was empty. She was alone in it, just as she'd been alone on that illusion of beach. At the hard rap on her front door the scream started building again. She clutched a hand to her throat to trap it and all but sprinted to the door. Whoever it was, it was better than being alone. Or so she thought until she saw Jordan. Oh, God, not him. Not now. "What do you want?" she snapped. "Go away. I'm busy." Before she could slam the door, he slapped a hand on it. "I want to talk to you about... What is it?" She was white as a ghost, her dark eyes enormous, and glassy with shock. "What's wrong?" "Nothing. I'm fine." The shakes started up again, harder this time. "I don't want to

... oh, the hell with it. You're better than nothing."

75

She simply fell against him. "I'm so cold. I'm so goddamn cold."

He scooped her right off her feet, then booted the door shut behind him.

"Couch or
bed?"

"Couch. I've got the shakes. I can't stop."

"Okay. It's okay." He sat, kept her cradled in his lap as he tugged the
throw off the

back of the couch. "You'll warm up in a minute," he comforted, and
tucked the

throw around her. "Just hold on to me."

He rubbed her back, her arms, then just wrapped his own arms around
her and

banked on body heat to do the rest. "Why are you wet?"

"I was in the tub. Then I wasn't. I don't know how it works." Her hand
was fisted

in his jacket, kneading there as she fought to steady herself. 'The son of a
bitch got

inside my head. You don't even know it's happening, it just does. I'm not
going to

make any sense for a couple more minutes."

"It's okay. I think I'm following you." His stroking hands bumped the
band that

tied her hair up. Without thinking, he slipped it off, combed his fingers
through.

"It was Kane? He was here?"

"I don't know." Exhausted, she laid her head against his chest. She had
her breath

back at least. It no longer felt as if a hand was squeezing her racing
heart. "Like I

said, I don't know how it works. I wanted to take a bath, relax."

To give her something else to think about, he deliberately sniffed her
neck. "You

smell terrific. Tasty. What is that?"

"Mango. Cut it out." But she made no attempt to get off his lap. "I did the bubble bath routine. Lit candles, got my bath book. It's got a Caribbean setting-the book, so that's why the mango and Buffett. I put a Jimmy Buffett CD on." She was rambling, but he let her talk it out. "So, I'm settling in-hot bubbles, Buffett, beer and book. The book's a romantic thriller, nice fast pace, sharp

76

dialogue. The scene I'm reading was from the heroine's viewpoint, during one of her breathers. She's on the terrace of her room at this tropical resort, that's actually a front for... Never mind, not important." She closed her eyes, soothed by the steady stroking of his hand over her hair. "So she's standing there, looking out at the water. You've got the surf, the breeze, gulls. The writer paints a good picture, so I'm seeing it. "Then I'm not just seeing it in my head, in the words on the page. But I don't even realize everything shifted, that I'm inside the image in my own head. That's the scariest part. You don't know." She rubbed her hands over her face. "I've got to get up." She tossed the throw aside and stood, then as an afterthought tightened the loose belt of her robe. "I was on the beach. Not just thinking about the beach, not just seeing it. I was there. I could smell the water, and flowers. Lilies, there were pots of white lilies. Didn't seem the least bit strange that I was all of a sudden walking over the sand, feeling the sun,

the breeze. My feet are bare, my toes are painted, I'm tanned and I'm wearing this

long silk thing, just a wrap. I can feel it fluttering around my legs."

"I bet you looked terrific."

She glanced over at him, and for the first time since he'd come in, the dimples

winked into her cheeks. "You're trying to keep me from freaking again."

"That's a definite yes, but I still bet you looked terrific."

"Sure I did. It was my fantasy. My own, personal tropical island. Perfect weather,

blue sea, white sand, and solitude. I was even thinking, as I walked the beach, how

foolish I'd been to ever worry about responsibilities. I could do or have anything I

wanted."

"What did you want, Dane?"

"At that moment? Just to be alone, I guess, not to worry about anything.

Not to

think how upset I was that the evil Joan had manipulated me out of a job

I really

loved, and

77

how I'm a little scared about starting Act Two of the Life of Dana."

"That's human. That's normal."

"It is." She glanced back at him-big, handsome Jordan Hawke watching her with

those deep blue eyes. He understood she wasn't looking for meaningless words of

comfort or sympathy.

"It is," she repeated, as soothed by his understanding as she'd been by his hands. "I

walked toward this grove of palm and fruit trees. I picked a mango. I could taste

it," she paused, touching her fingers to her lips. "Basically, I just walked along

thinking, boy, this is the life. But it wasn't the life, it wasn't my life. And it's not

what I want, not really."

She came back to the couch, afraid her legs might go weak again when she told

the rest. "That's the thought that came into my head-and then I heard voices. Off in

the distance, but familiar. And I thought, this isn't real. It's just a trick.

That's when

it happened. Oh, God." As her chest tightened again, she pressed her fists between

her breasts. "Oh, God."

"Easy now." He closed his hands over hers, squeezing lightly until she met his

eyes. "Take your time."

"Storm came in. That's a mild word for it. When I realized it wasn't real, the world

went to hell. Wind, rain, dark, and the cold. Jesus, Jordan, it was so cold.

I starting

running. I knew I had to get away, because I wasn't alone after all. He was there,

and he was coming for me. I got back to the beach, but the ocean was insane.

Walls of black water, fifty, sixty feet high. I fell. I felt him over me, around me.

That cold. And the pain. Horrible, tearing pain."

Her voice was breaking. She couldn't stop it. "He was ripping out my soul. I knew

I'd rather face anything but that, so I jumped into the sea."

"Come here. Come here, you're shaking again." He gathered her close.

"I woke up, or came back, whatever it is. In the tub,

78

strangling for air. The bathwater had gone cold. I don't know how long I'd been out

of it, Jordan. I don't know how long he had me."

"He didn't have you. He didn't," he insisted when she shook her head. Gently, he eased her back so he could see her face. "A part of you, that's all. He can't get the whole, because he can't see the whole. A fantasy, like you said. That's how he works. And he can't push you into it so deep that a part of your mind doesn't surface again and question. And know."

"Maybe not. But he sure knows how to go for the gut. I've never been that scared."

"Once you move past that into pissed-off, you'll feel better."

"Yeah, you're probably right. I want a drink," she decided and pushed away from him.

"You want water?" He realized she was coming back fast when the question had her curling her lip at him.

"I want a beer. I never had my bath beer." She rose, seemed to hesitate.

"You want one?"

Still watching her, he laid his fingers on his own wrist as if checking for a pulse.

"Yeah."

He liked the way she snickered at him before she walked away. It was a normal sound, a Dana sound. There'd been nothing normal in the way she'd collapsed on him.

If he hadn't come by ... but he had, he reminded himself. He was here, she wasn't alone. And she'd gotten through it.

He got to his feet, took his first real look around her place. Pure Dana, he thought.

Strong color, comfortable furniture, and books.

He wandered after her, leaned on the wall. More books, he noted. Who but Dana would keep Nietzsche in the kitchen? "First time I've been in your place."

She kept her back to him as she opened two beers. "You wouldn't have gotten in this time if I hadn't been wiggled."

79

"Despite that lack of welcome, I like it. Suits you, Stretch. And because it does, I

don't suppose you'd consider bunking at Flynn's for the next little while. I can take

my stuff over to Brad's and hang there if that's a factor."

She turned back slowly. "Are you being accommodating because I was hysterical?"

"I'm being accommodating because I want you to feel safe. To be safe."

"No need to put yourself out."

"I care about you." He shifted, blocking her exit before she could move past him.

There was a quick flash of rage over his face, almost as quickly banked. Where had that been hiding? she wondered. And how did he tuck it away again?

"I care, Dana. Just for a minute, one damn minute, set aside the way things ended

up. We cared about each other, and if you'd feel safer at Flynn's, I'll get out of your way."

"All the way back to New York?"

His mouth thinned as he took one of the bottles out of her hands. "No." Maybe it was unfair to poke and prod at him. But what the hell did she care about

fair when it came to Jordan? "I wouldn't feel safer at Flynn's-with or without you

around. In spite of my condition when you knocked on the door, I can take care of

myself. I did take care of myself. I got out of it without your help. And nobody, not you, not that bastard Kane, is going to run me out of my own apartment."

"Well." He took a sip of beer. "'I see you've moved to the pissed-off stage of tonight's entertainment."

"I don't like being manipulated. He used my own thoughts against me, and you're using old feelings. We cared about each other?" she shot out. "Maybe we did, but remember, that's past tense. If you want to be such a nice guy and get out of my way, then get out of it now. You're crowding me."

80

"I've got things to say to you, and if I've got to block you in to get you to hear them, then that's the way it is. I didn't know you loved me. I don't know what it would have changed, I just know it would've changed ... something. Just like I

know I wasn't ready for it. I wasn't smart enough or steady enough."

"You were smart and steady enough to do what you wanted."

"That's exactly right." With his eyes locked on hers, he nodded. "I was self-absorbed, broody, and restless. What the hell did you want with me, anyway?"

"You idiot." Because she'd lost her taste for it, she set the beer aside.

"You've just

described the sort of guy every girl falls for at least once. Then you add those

whiffs of recklessness, the brain, the looks, and the chemistry, and I didn't have a

chance. How can you make a living writing about people when you don't understand half of them?"

When she tried to push past him, he took her arm. The look she sent him could have melted steel. "Buy a clue, Hawke. I said girls fall for once. Girls generally evolve into smart and steady women who put away the childish things like self-absorbed assholes."

"That's good. I prefer women." He put his beer on the counter. "I've always preferred you."

"Do you think that makes my heart go pitty-pat?"

"Not yours, Stretch. But this might."

He caught her face in his free hand, allowed himself the perverse pleasure of

seeing her fury leap out of her eyes, then covered her mouth with his.

Thank God, he thought, thank God she was angry enough that he could do what he

hadn't been able to do when she was pale and shaken.

There'd never been a taste he'd craved the way he craved Dana's. He had never

understood it. And never worried that he should. It simply was. She might rake

him to the bone for it, but he had a point to prove. To both of them.

81

He wasn't gentle. She'd never seemed to expect or need gentleness from him. He

simply pressed her back to the wall and took.

Heat flooded her, as enervating and nearly as terrifying as the cold she'd experienced earlier. There was no point in lying to herself, she wanted to feel this

involved again, this aware of self, this needy.

But lying to him was a different matter entirely, so she shoved at him, struggled

with herself, and refused to yield to either.

He laid a hand on her heart, and with his mouth only a breath from hers now,
stared into her eyes. "Yeah. That got it going."
"Get this. It's not going to happen. It's never going to happen again."
"Somebody once said, 'What's past is prologue.'"
"Shakespeare, you ignorant jerk. The Tempest."
"Right." Amused admiration flickered over his face. "You were always better at remembering that stuff than I was. But, in any case, I'm not looking to repeat myself. However much we're the same, we're that much different. We're not the same people we were, Dana. I want a chance to see who we would be together now."
"I'm not interested."
"Sure you are. You've got a curious mind, and you're wondering, the same as I am.
But maybe you're afraid that being around me will prove too much for your self-control."
"Please. You arrogant pig."
"Well, then, why don't we test your self-control and satisfy my curiosity, and have ourselves a date?"
He'd managed to throw her off. "A what?"
"You remember what a date is, Dane. Two people going out to a prearranged location." Idly, he ran the lapel of her robe between his thumb and forefinger. "Oh, I see, you thought I meant we'd just jump straight into bed, rock and roll. Okay, if that's the way you want it-"

"Stop it." Baffled, annoyed, and more than half amused, she elbowed him aside. "I was not thinking about sex." And because that was a complete lie, her tone was aloof. "There's not going to be any rock and roll, as you so succinctly put it. And the idea of a date is just ludicrous."

"Why? You'd get a free meal out of it. And the added pleasure of being able to shut me down when I put the moves on you, and send me home sexually frustrated."

"That does have some appeal."

"Saturday night. I'll pick you up at seven-thirty."

"How do you know I don't already have a date for Saturday night?" He grinned at her. "I asked Flynn if you were seeing anybody. I know how to do my research, Stretch."

"Flynn doesn't know everything," she retorted as Jordan strolled away. "Wait just a damn minute." She rushed out into the living room, caught up with him at the door. "There are some basic requirements. The meal's in an actual restaurant. No fast food, and not the Main Street Diner. And when you say you'll pick me up at seven-thirty, that doesn't mean you get here at seven-forty-five." Agreed." He paused. "I know there's no point in asking if you want me to stay, bunk on the couch. But you could call Malory, and I could hang out until she got here."

"I'm okay."

"You always were, Stretch. See you."

Thoughtfully, she locked the door behind him before wandering back to the

kitchen to pour the warm beer down the sink. It seemed to be her night to waste beer.

She didn't know if any of it brought her closer to the key, but she'd certainly learned some new things this evening. Kane already knew she was searching for the second key, and hadn't wasted any time putting the whammy on her. He'd wanted her to know he was watching.

And didn't that mean he was worried that she had a good chance of succeeding?

83

Yeah, that made sense. Malory had shut him down once. So maybe he would be

less cocky this time up. And more vicious, she mused. -

She'd learned that Jordan still had that core of decency that had always attracted

her. She'd been scared, nearly ill with fear, and he'd given her exactly what she

needed to find her feet again without making her feel foolish or weak.

She had to give him credit for that.

More, she admitted as she went to clean up the mess she'd left in the bathroom,

she had to give him credit for being honest enough to say he'd been selfish.

She could still hate him for it, but she had to respect the fact that he acknowledged

it.

She had to bear down hard just to cross the threshold into the bathroom.

It gave

her the willies to see the book still floating, bloated with water, in the tub.

It was symbolic, she thought, that he'd invaded this most personal of rooms. It told

her there was no place that she would be completely safe until the key was found

or the month was over.

She pulled the plug, watched the water begin to drain.

"Just have to deal," she ordered. "And it won't be so easy to scare me next time. I'll

deal with you. With Jordan. With myself. Because I learned one more thing

tonight. Goddamn it, I'm still in love with the jerk."

It didn't make her feel any better to say it out loud, but it did help to put her

bathroom to rights again. Her apartment, her things, her life, she thought as she

went into the bedroom.

As far as Jordan was concerned, it was much more likely that it was the memory

she still loved. The boy, the young, wounded man who'd been her first love. Didn't

every woman have a soft spot for her first true love?

She settled on the bed, took her bed book out of the nightstand drawer.

The

paperback she kept there was only

84

a front. The one she opened was Cold Case, by Jordan Hawke.

Wouldn't he crow if he knew she was reading his latest book? Worse, if he knew

she was enjoying every damn word.

Maybe she was still in love with the memory of the boy, but she would rather eat

live slugs than have the man discover that she'd read every one of his books.

Twice.

Chapter Six

THEY started work on the porch, taking advantage of the fine fall weather and

Zoe's experience.

By unanimous agreement, Dana and Malory had elected her the goddess of

remodel. In their oldest clothes, and with new tools for Dana and Malory, they

worked at Zoe's direction propping the porch for paint.

"I didn't know it would be, so much work." Malory sat back on her heels and

examined her nails. "I've ruined my manicure. And you just gave it to me a couple

of days ago," she reminded Zoe.

"I'll give you another. If we don't scrape and sand off the peeling paint, the new

paint won't stick right. It needs a good, smooth, porous surface, or we'll be doing

this again in the spring."

"We bow to you," Dana told Zoe, and watched her wield the little electric sander.

"I always thought you just sort of slopped the paint on, then waited for it to dry."

"That kind of thinking is why you bow to me."

86

"It's already gone to her head," Dana grumbled and attacked curls of peeling paint

with her scraper.

"I wouldn't mind having a little crown, something delicate and tasteful."

Even as

she spoke, Zoe kept one eye on her underlings. "It's going to look great.

You'll

see."

"Why don't you entertain us during the drudgery?" Malory suggested.

"Tell us

about dinner with Brad last night."

"It was no big deal. He just played some video games with Simon, ate, then left. I

shouldn't have gotten so worked up about it. I just haven't had a guy over in a while. And I'm not used to cooking for millionaires. I felt like I needed finger bowls or something."

"Brad's not like that," Dana protested. "A guy with money can still be normal. Brad used to eat at our place all the time when we were kids. And we hardly ever used the finger bowls."

"It's not the same. We didn't grow up together, for one thing. And your family and his have more in common. A hairdresser who grew up in a trailer in West Virginia

doesn't have a lot to say to the heir to an American empire."

"You're not being fair to him, or yourself," Malory told her.

"Maybe not. Just realistic. Anyway, he makes me nervous. I guess it's not only the money, really. Jordan has money, he must with all those bestsellers. But he doesn't make me so nervous. We had a nice, easy time together when he came over and fixed my car."

Dana lost her rhythm and ended up with a splinter in her thumb. "Your car?"

Scowling, she sucked viciously at the thumb. "Jordan fixed your car?"

"Yeah. I didn't know he used to work on cars. He really knows his way around an

engine, too. He just came by the other afternoon with all these tools and said why

didn't he have a look at my car for me. It was really sweet of him."

"He's just a big sugar cookie," Dana said with a smile that clamped her teeth

together.

"Oh, don't be like that, Dana." Zoe switched off the sander, angled her head. "He didn't have to bother, and he spent over two hours messing with it, and wouldn't take anything but two glasses of iced tea."

"I bet he ogled your ass when you walked in the house to get it."

"Maybe." Zoe worked hard to keep her face sober. "But only in a healthy, friend-of-the-family sort of way. A small price to pay for saving me another trip to the garage. And the fact is, my car hasn't run this well since I bought it. Actually, it didn't run this well then, either."

"Yeah, he always was good with cars." And generous with his time, Dana was

forced to admit. "You're right, it was considerate."

"And sweet," Malory added with a meaningful look at Dana.

"And sweet," she mumbled.

"He let Simon hang around him when he got home from school, too."

Zoe flipped

the sander back on, bent to her work. "It's fun to see Simon pal around with a man.

I guess I have to say Bradley was nice to Simon too, and I appreciate that."

"So neither of them put the moves on Simon's mother?" Dana wanted to know.

"No." With a half laugh, Zoe scooted farther down the porch. "Of course not.

Jordan was just doing a favor for a friend, and Bradley ... it's not like that."

Dana's opinion was a long hmmm as she got back to work.

By lunchtime the porch was sufficiently prepped to pass Zoe's inspection. They

gave their tired muscles a rest and sat on the sanded boards eating tuna sandwiches.

With a morning's work behind them, the sun bright, and the mood mellow, Dana

decided it was time to tell them her experience of the night before.

"So ... I had a little run-in with Kane last night."

Malory choked, grabbed for her bottle of water. "What?

88

What? We've been here for over three hours, and you're just getting around to

telling us that?"

"I didn't want to start off the morning with it. I knew we'd all get freaked again."

"You're okay?" Zoe laid a hand on Dana's arm. "You're not hurt or anything?"

"No, but I've got to tell you, the little brush I had with him before was nothing

compared to this. I knew what happened with you, Mai, but I still didn't get it. I do

now."

"Tell us." Malory shifted so she and Zoe flanked Dana.

It was easier this time. She was able to relate the experience more calmly and with

more detail than she'd done with Jordan. Still, her voice shook at times, and she

had to reach for her Thermos of coffee, sip slowly to ease her throat.

"You could've drowned." Zoe put her arm around Dana's shoulder. "In the tub."

"I wondered about that. But I don't think so. If he could just, well, eliminate us,

why not have us walk off a cliff, or step in front of a truck? Something like that."

"Boy, that's really cheery." Zoe stared out at the street, nearly winced when a car

drove by. "I'm so glad you mentioned it."

"Come on. Seriously. It seems to me he can only go so far. Like it was with

Malory. It comes down to us making a choice-to reaching down inside, holding on

to enough of ourselves to recognize the illusion and reject it."

"But he hurt you just the same," Zoe pointed out.

"Oh, man." Remembering, Dana rubbed a hand over her heart. "I'll say.

Even if the

pain was an illusion, it did the job. Worse than the pain was knowing what the

pain meant, then the fear that he could take that from me."

"You should've called." There was as much exasperation as concern in Malory's

voice. "Dana, you should have called me, or Zoe. Both of us. I know what it's like

to be caught in one of those illusions. You didn't have to be alone."

89

"I wasn't. Exactly. Afterward, I mean. I was going to call. In fact, I think I was just

going to stand in the bedroom and scream for both of you, but then

Jordan

knocked on the door."

"Oh."

Dana stared at Malory. "There's no 'oh' in that meaningful tone. He just happened

to be there at a moment when I'd have welcomed a visit from a two-headed dwarf

as long as he could chase the bogeyman away."

"Funny coincidence, though," Malory said with a flutter of lashes. "I mean when

you figure the elements of fate and destiny and connections."

"Look, just because you're all mush-brained over Flynn, don't assume the rest of

the world has to fall in line. He came by, and he behaved very decently.

At first."

"Let's hear about at second, then," Zoe insisted.

"Unlike Brad, apparently, Jordan rarely hesitates to make his move. He cornered me in the kitchen."

"Really?" Malory gave a sigh. "The first time Flynn kissed me was in the kitchen."

"Anyway, I'm going out with him Saturday night." She waited, then scowled when

no one spoke. "Well?"

Zoe braced her elbow on her thigh, propped her chin on her fist. "I was just

thinking that it'd be nice if the two of you could at least be friends again.

And that

maybe, from an entirely different perspective, becoming friends again is part of

what you have to do to find the key."

"I think I need to get into this a little more before I start multitasking. I don't know

if I can be friends with Jordan again, because ... I'm still sort of in love with him."

"Dana." Malory took her hand, but Dana broke free, pushed off the steps.

"I don't know if I'm still in love-more or less-with him him, or with the him that I

fell for all that time ago. You know, like this memory of him. This image, and it's

no more than an illusion now. But I've got to find out, don't I?"

90

"Yeah." Zoe unwrapped the brownies she'd brought along and held one out to

Dana. "You need to find out."

"And if I am in love with him, I can get over it." She took a huge bite of brownie.

"I got over it before. If I'm not in love with him, then everything gets back to

normal or as back to normal as possible until I find the key."

"What about his feelings?" Malory asked her. "Aren't they a factor?"
"He had it his way once. This time around it's my way." She rolled her shoulders,
pleased that the weight seemed to shrug off with the statement. "Let's paint our porch."
* * *

WHILE they broke out brushes and rollers, Jordan relayed Dana's experience to Flynn and Brad.
They sat in Flynn's living room, set up as an informal think tank. Jordan paced as he spoke, and Flynn's dog, Moe, watched every movement in hopes that Jordan might detour to the kitchen, and cookies.
Now and again, if Jordan's direction veered closer to the doorway, Moe's big black tail would thump in anticipation. So far it hadn't netted him any treats, but it did get him a few rubs on the back with Flynn's foot.
"Why the hell didn't you bring her back here?" Flynn demanded.
"I guess I could have. If I'd knocked her unconscious and hog-tied her. This is Dana we're talking about."
"Okay, okay, point taken. You could've told me all this last night."
"I could've-and you'd have rushed over there. Which would've annoyed her. You'd have tried to make her come here, which would have meant the two of you would've ended up fighting. I just figured she'd had enough for one night. Added to that, I wanted to tell you both about it at once, when Malory wasn't around."

"Now that we do know," Brad put in, "what do we do about it?"

"There you go." Jordan walked back to the couch, and burst Moe's cookie fantasy by sitting down on the crate that served as coffee table. "We can't get her, or any of them, out of this. Even if we could, I don't know if we should. There's a lot at stake."

"Three souls," Brad murmured. "I don't think I've adjusted to that yet. Even knowing what happened with Malory, it doesn't compute in my head. But I'll go along with this. We can't get them out of it. So the question comes down to two parts. What can we do to keep them safe, and how do we help them find the key?"

"We make sure none of them is alone any more than necessary," Flynn began.

"Even though we know that he got to Malory when she was with Dana and Zoe, it's a precaution we ought to take."

"She won't move in here, Flynn. I offered to move out, and she still wouldn't go for it." Absently Jordan rubbed his chin, reminding himself that he hadn't shaved.

"But one of us could move into her place. At least stay there with her at night."

"Oh, yeah, she'll go for that." Sarcasm dripped from Flynn's voice. "The minute I

say I'm going to sleep at her place, she'll get her back up, or just brain me with the handiest blunt instrument. And she sure as hell isn't going to let you move in with her. Or Brad either."

"I was thinking of Moe."

The annoyance on Flynn's face changed to bafflement. "Moe?"

At the sound of his name, Moe leaped up happily, knocking magazines off the crate with the enthusiastic sweep of his tail before trying to climb into Flynn's lap.

"You said Moe sensed Kane, or danger at least, when you went into the building where he'd separated Malory from Dana and Zoe."

92

"Yeah." Remembering it, Flynn robbed Moe's big head. "And he charged up those stairs ready to rip out throats. Didn't you, you wild thing?"

"So, he could be a sort of early-warning system. And if he carried on the way you said he did before, he would alert the neighbors. Potentially, he could keep Dana grounded."

"It's a good idea," Brad agreed, and began to pick a few of Moe's hairs off his trousers. "But just how are you going to talk Dana into taking Moe as a roommate?"

"I can cover that," Flynn said smugly. "I'll tell her I'm moving in at her place, and we'll have the expected argument. I'll give in, then ask her if she won't at least compromise by taking Moe so I can sleep at night. She'll feel sorry for me and agree so she doesn't come off as bitchy."

"I've always admired your sneaky, serpentine methods," Brad commented.

"Just gotta keep your eye on the goal. Which brings us back to the key."

"My schedule's still the most flexible," Jordan began. "I can take all the time needed to dig into this. Research, brainstorming, legwork. You've got your

journalist's resources," he said to Flynn. "Plus Malory's willing and able to work with you, and Dana and Zoe have already let you in-as far as women ever let men in-to their group. Brad's got the HomeMakers' advantage. He can drop by their building most anytime-How's it going, ladies? Looks good. Can I give you a hand with that?"

"I can do that. Maybe you could casually mention to Zoe that I'm not now, nor have I ever been, an axe murderer."

"I'll see if I can work it into our next conversation," Flynn promised.

* * *

IT was time, Dana told herself, to roll up her sleeves and get to work. To do

something positive, something to offset

93

the nasty seed of helplessness Kane had planted inside her.

She'd be damned if she would let it take root.

If her key was knowledge, then she'd get smart. And what better place to seek

knowledge than the library?

It galled her to go back as a patron rather than an employee. But she would just

swallow the bile and do the job.

She didn't bother to go home first, to change, but in her paint-splattered clothes

walked straight into what had been a key in her life.

The smell caught her instantly. Books, a world of books. But she buried the

sentimentality. Inside books, she reminded herself as she headed straight to one of

the computer stations, were answers.

She'd read everything available on Celtic lore and mythology, so now she would expand on that. She ran a search for titles that related to sorcery. Know your enemy, she thought. Knowledge isn't just a defense. Knowledge is power.

Noting down her top choices, she ran other searches using what she thought of as the main code words from Rowena's clue. Satisfied that she'd made a good start, she headed toward the stacks.

"Did you forget something?" Her irritating toothy smile in place, Sandi stepped into her path.

"I keep trying to, but it's tough when you keep getting in my face. Fuck off, Sandi," she said in her sweetest tone.

"We don't appreciate that kind of language here."

With a shrug, Dana skirted around her and kept going. "I don't appreciate your overly rosy perfume, but there you go."

"You don't work here anymore." Chasing after her, Sandi snatched at Dana's arm.

"This is a public building, and it happens I have a library card. Now take your hand off me, or I'm going to

94

mess up those pearly whites that your daddy probably paid a lot of money for."

She took a deep breath to find her calm. She wanted to get her books and get the

hell out. "Why don't you run up and tell Joan I'm here, nefariously checking out

library books. Unless she's off in Oz picking on a scarecrow."

"I can call the police."

"Yeah, do that little thing. It'll be interesting to see what my brother writes in the Dispatch about how card-carrying patrons are treated these days in the local library."

She flipped a little wave at Sandi's face and swung into the stacks.

"Don't worry.

I'll make sure he spells your name right."

Bile was a little harder to swallow than she'd thought, Dana admitted as she began

selecting her books. It was painful, every bit as much as it was maddening, not to

be able to come here, even as a patron, without being hassled.

But she wasn't going to be chased away by the yappy little pom-pom queen. And

she wasn't going to be frightened off by some hell-bent sorcerer.

They had a lot in common as far as she was concerned. They were both riddled

with petty jealousy that lashed out and caused pain.

Jealousy, she thought, pursing her lips. It was, in a way, the opposite of love. As

lies were to truth, as cowardice to valor, and so on. Another angle, she decided,

and detoured to grab a copy of Othello, the king of stories on jealousy.

As she carted her load to checkout, Dana worked up a smile for one of the women

she'd worked with for years. She dumped the books on the counter, dug out her

card. "Hi, Annie. How's it going?"

"Good. Fine." In an exaggerated motion, Annie slid her gaze to the right and

cleared her throat.

Following the direction, Dana spotted Sandi, arms crossed, lips tight, watching.

"Oh, for Christ's sake," Dana said under her breath.

"Sorry, Dana. Sorry about everything." Keeping her voice low, Annie scanned the books, stacked them.

"Don't worry about it." After jamming her card back in her purse, Dana scooped up her armload of books. She sent Sandi a wide, wide smile and walked out.

* * *

ONE of the perks of having a mature adult relationship with a woman, to Flynn's

mind, was coming home from work and finding her.

The smell of her, the look of her, the simple presence of her, made everything just a little clearer.

And when that woman, that pretty, sexy, fascinating woman, was cooking, it added just one more delight to the day.

He didn't know what she had going on the stove, and he didn't care. It was more

than enough to see her, stirring something in a pot while Moe sprawled under the table, snoring like a freight train.

His life, Flynn thought, had found its true rhythm when Malory Price had walked into it.

He stepped up behind her, wrapped his arms around her waist, and pressed his lips

to the side of her neck. "You're the best thing that ever happened to me."

"I certainly am." She turned her head so she could meet his lips with hers. "How are things?"

"Things are good." He nudged her around for a longer, more satisfying kiss. "And

better now. You didn't have to cook, Mai. I know you were working all day."

"I just punched up some jarred spaghetti sauce."

"Still, you don't." He took her hands, then frowned as he turned them over. "What's this?"

"Just some blisters. I'm telling myself they're good for me. Shows I'm pulling my weight."

He kissed them. "You know, if you'd wait for the weekend, I could give you a hand with the place."

96

"We really want to do it ourselves, at least start on it ourselves. I've got a few

blisters and pretty much ruined a pair of jeans, but we have the most beautifully painted porch in the Valley. I wouldn't complain if you poured me a glass of wine, though."

He got out a bottle and two of the wineglasses she'd bought. It seemed to him there were more glasses in the cabinet than there had been the last time he'd looked.

She was always slipping things in.

Glasses, fluffy towels, fancy soaps that he hesitated to actually use. It was one of the oddities and interests of having a woman around the house.

"Jordan told me what happened with Dana."

"I thought he would." Though it wasn't quite dark, she lit the long oval candle

she'd picked up for the table. "We both know how horrible it must have been for

her. I know how much you love her, Flynn. I love her too. But we can't shield her

from this as much as we can just be there for her."

"Maybe not, but Jordan had an idea that might do a little of both."

He poured the wine, told her about using Moe.

"It's brilliant," Malory decided, then laughed down at the still snoring Moe. "She'll

certainly agree to it, and if nothing else, she won't feel so alone at night."

After a

sip of wine, she moved to the sink to fill a pot with water for the pasta.

"I suppose

Jordan told you they're going out Saturday night?"

He'd been staring at the candle, thinking how odd it was to see it flickering away

on the ancient picnic table he used in the kitchen. "Who's going out?" As it hit

him, Flynn swallowed wine in one hard gulp. "Jordan and Dana?

Going... out?"

"So he didn't tell you."

"No, it didn't come up."

"And," she concluded as she set the pot on the stove, "you're not too keen on the

idea."

97

"I don't know. I don't want to get into it. Damn it, I don't want them messing each

other up again." Knowing that Jordan was working upstairs, Flynn glanced at the

ceiling. "It's the person who ends up in the middle, and that would be me, who

gets his ass kicked from both sides."

"She still loves him."

"Loves who?" Shock jumped into his eyes. "Loves him? Jordan? She loves him?

Shit. Shit! Why do you tell me these things?"

"Because that's what people hi love do, Flynn." She got three woven place mats

from a drawer he wasn't sure he'd known was there and set them neatly on the table. "They tell each other things. And I don't expect you to go running to Jordan with this information."

"Man." Pacing now, he shoved a hand through his hair. "See, if you didn't tell me,

I wouldn't have to think about not saying anything to nun, or not saying anything to her. I would just exist in a nice bubble of ignorance."

"And I think Zoe's interested-extremely reluctantly- in Brad."

"Stop it. Stop this flood of information right now."

"You're a newspaperman." Enjoying herself, she pulled out the salad she'd put

together and began to dress it. "You're supposed to thrive on information."

He'd never seen the salad bowl before, or the wooden things she was using to toss

the greens. "I'm going to get a headache."

"No, you're not. You want your friends to be happy, don't you?"

"Sure."

"We're happy, aren't we?"

Cautious now, he replied, "Yes."

"We're happy, and we're in love. Ergo, you want your friends happy and in love, too. Right?"

"This is a trick question. So rather than answer it, I'm going to distract you."

98

"I'm not making love with you while dinner's cooking and Jordan's upstairs."

"That wasn't my idea, but I really like it. I'm-going to distract you by telling you

that the kitchen guys are coming on Monday to start the remodel."

"Really?" As he'd planned, every other thought spilled out of her mind.
"Really?"

she repeated and leaped at him. "Oh, this is great! This is wonderful!"

"I thought that would do it. So, are you going to move in with me?"

She touched her lips to his. "Ask me again when the kitchen's done."

"You're a tough one, Malory."

* * *

AFTER a day of manual labor, Dana longed for a soak in a hot tub
before she

dived into her new resource books. But she lacked the courage to do it.

Since that realization was too mortifying to dwell on, she fantasized
about the

house she'd buy one day. The big, secluded house. With a library the
size of a
barn.

And a Jacuzzi, she added as she pressed on the ache at the small of her
back.

But until that happy day, she would settle for her apartment. Eventually,
for all the

rooms in her apartment, which included the one with the tub hi it.

She could join a gym, she thought as she settled down to her books for
an evening
of research.

She hated gyms. They were full of people. Sweaty people. Naked people
who

would insist on sharing her Jacuzzi time.

It just wasn't worth the aggravation. Better to wait until she could afford
her own

place. Of course, when she could afford her own place-with Jacuzzi-it
was

unlikely that she'd be spending eight hours scraping and painting until
her back

ached.

Ordering herself to settle down, she started on Othello. She had her own copy, of course. She had a copy of everything Shakespeare had written, but she wanted a different volume. A kind of fresh look, she thought.

It was jealousy and ambition that had driven Iago, she mused. He had planted "the green-ey'd monster which doth mock the meat it feeds on" in Othello, then had watched it devour him.

It was jealousy and ambition that drove Kane, and so he watched as his monster devoured.

She could learn from this, she thought, of what made a man-or a god-soulless.

She'd barely started when the knock on the door interrupted.

"What now?" Grumbling to herself, she went to answer it. Her irritation only

increased when the door opened on Jordan.

"This had better not become a habit."

"Let's go for a ride."

Her response was to slam the door, but he anticipated her, slapped a hand on it,

braced it open. "Let me put that another way. I'm heading up to Warrior's Peak. Do you want to come?"

"What are you going up there for? You're a bystander hi this deal."

"That's a matter of opinion.-I'm going up because I have some questions. Actually,

I decided to get out of Ryan's place after dinner. To give the lovebirds a little

space." He leaned comfortably on the jamb as he spoke but kept that hand firm on

the door. "Found myself heading out of town and up the mountain road. Figured I

might as well keep going, have myself a chat with Pitte and Rowena.
Then I
thought, You know, it's just going to tick Dana off if I do that without
running it
by her. So I turned around and came back. I'm running it by you."
"I suppose you want points for that."

100

His mouth curved. "If you're keeping score."
"I don't see that you have anything to talk to them about."
"Let's put this one more way. I'm going, with or without you." He
straightened, let
his hand drop from the door. "But if you want to come along, you can
drive."
"Big deal."
"My car."

The image of his gorgeous, muscular, classic T-Bird flashed into her
mind. She
had to make a conscious effort not to drool. "You fight dirty."
He took his keys out of his pocket. And dangled them.
Her internal war lasted about three seconds before she snatched the keys
out of his
hand. "Let me get a jacket."

* * *

WHATEVER his flaws, Jordan Hawke knew cars. The Thunderbird
climbed the
hills like a mountain cat, all sleek grace and muscle. It clung to curves
and roared
down straightaways.
Some might think of it as a vehicle, others as a toy. But Dana knew it
was a
machine. A first-class one.
Being behind the wheel wasn't just a sexy pleasure. It let Dana shift the
situation
as smoothly as she shifted gears. She was in charge now. The trip to the
Peak

might have been Jordan's idea, but by God, she was driving.
The evening was brisk, and grew brisker yet as they climbed to higher elevations,
but the top was down. She was glad to trade chilly fingers and the bite of the wind
for the sheer joy of zipping along the roads in the open air.
The trees were at their peak, the force of colors made only more brilliant by the
sheen of gold from the setting sun. Fallen leaves skipped and skittered across the
road where light and shadow danced.
It was like driving into a story, she mused, where anything could happen around
the next turn.

101

"How's it handling for you?" Jordan asked her.

"She's got style. And muscle."

"I always thought the same about you."

She slid her gaze his direction, balefully, then focused on the road.

However

much fun she was having, it didn't mean she couldn't take a poke at him.

"I don't see why you need a car like this when you live in an urban environment

where mass transit is not only readily available but efficient."

"Two reasons. First, for those times when I'm not in an urban environment, such as

now. And second, I lusted after her."

"Yeah." She couldn't blame him. "Fifty-seven was the primo year for T-Birds."

"No question. I've got a '63 Stingray."

Her eyes went glassy. "You do not."

"Four-speed, 327. Fuel injection."

She felt the long, liquid pull in her belly. "Shut up."

"I had her up to 120. She'd've given me more, but we were just getting to know

each other." He waited a beat. "I've got my eye on this very sweet Caddy convertible. Fifty-nine. Single quadajet carb."

"I hate you."

"Hey, a guy's got to have a hobby."

"The '63 Stingray's my fantasy car. The one I'm going to have one day, when all my dreams come true."

He smiled a little. "What color?"

"Black. Serious business black. Four-speed manual tranny. Doesn't have to be the

327, though that'd be the cream. Gotta be the convertible, though. The coupe just won't do."

She fell silent for a few minutes, just enjoying the ride.

"Zoe mentioned you'd fixed her car."

"I stopped over. Timing was off, and the carb needed a little work.

Nothing major."

She made herself say it. "It was a nice thing to do."

102

"I had the time." He shrugged a shoulder, stretched his legs out a little more. "Just

figured she could use a hand with it."

Suddenly she understood, and felt ashamed for her initial reaction when she'd

heard he'd gone to Zoe's. The hardworking single mother, raising a young boy.

Just like his mother.

Of course he'd gone by to help.

"She really appreciated it," Dana told him, but kept it light. "Especially since you

don't make her nervous the way Brad does."

"I don't? I think I'm insulted and will now be honor-bound to work harder to make

her nervous."

"What kind of watch you got there?"

"Watch?" Baffled, he turned his wrist. "I don't know. It tells time."

She shook her hair back and laughed. "That's what I thought you'd say.

Sorry,

you're never going to make her nervous."

She slowed, reluctantly, as they approached the gates. Then she stopped, looking

at the house through them as she dug her brush out of her purse. "Some place," she

commented, brushing out the knots and tangles the wind had tied into her hair.

"You live in a place like this, you could have that classic 'Vette. Keep it in a big,

heated garage like it deserves. I wonder if Pitte and Rowena drive."

"That's some segue."

"No, really. Think about it. They are what they are, and they've been around since

way before anybody even thought about the combustible engine. They can do what

they do, but has either of them ever taken driving lessons, stood in line at the

DMV, haggled over insurance?"

She dropped the brush back in her purse, looked over at Jordan. His hair was as

windblown as hers had been, yet, she noted, it didn't look unkempt. Just sexy.

"How do they live?" she continued. "We don't really

103

know what they do, when it comes to ordinary things. Human things. Do they

watch TV? Play canasta? Do they cruise the mall? What about friends?

Do they

have any?"

"If they do, there'd be a regular turnover. Friends, being human, would have that

annoying habit of dying."

"That's right." She said it quietly as she looked back toward the house.

"It must be

lonely. Painfully lonely. All that power doesn't make them one of us.

Living in that

great house doesn't make it their home. It's weird, isn't it? Feeling sorry for gods."

"No. It's intuitive. And just the kind of thing that's going to help you find the key.

The more you know and understand them, the closer you come to figuring out

your part of me puzzle."

"Maybe." Suddenly the iron gates swung open. "I guess that's our invitation."

She drove, in the twilight, toward the great stone house.

The old man she'd come to think of as the caretaker hurried up to the car to open

her door. "Welcome. I'll see to the car for you, miss."

"Thanks." She studied him, trying to get a gauge on his age. Seventy? Eighty?

Three thousand and two? "I never got your name," she said to him.

"Oh, I'd be Caddock, miss."

"Caddock. Is that Scots, Irish?"

"Welsh. I'd be from Wales, in the original way of things, miss."

Like Rowena, she thought. "Have you worked for Pitte and Rowena long?"

"Yes, indeed." His eyes seemed to twinkle at her. "I've been in their service a

number of years now." He looked past her, nodded his head. "There's a fine sight,

isn't it, then?"

Dana turned, and stared at the huge buck that stood on the verge between lawn

and forest. His rump seemed to glimmer white in the soft haze of twilight, and his

rack shone silver.

104

"Traditional symbolism," Jordan said, though he was no less struck by the buck's

magnificence. "The seeker sees a white deer or hare at the start of a quest."

"Malory saw it," Dana murmured over the lump in her throat. "The first night we

came here. But I didn't, Zoe didn't." She walked to stand beside Jordan.

"Does that

mean it was already ordained that Malory would search for the first key?

That it

had nothing to do with the luck of the draw? That was just show?"

"Or ritual. You still had to choose to reach into the box for a disk. You decide to

follow the deer, or turn away from it."

"But is it real? Is that deer really standing over there, or are we imagining it?"

"That's something else for you to decide." He waited until the deer faded back into

the shadows before he turned.

Both the old man and the car were gone. After the initial jolt, Jordan slid his hands

into his pockets. "You've got to admit, that is very cool."

The entrance doors opened. Rowena stood dead center, the foyer lights spilling

over her fiery hair, glinting on the long silver dress she wore. "How lovely to see

you both." She held out a hand in welcome. "I was just pining for company."

Chapter Seven

PITTIE was already in the parlor, wearing a black shirt and trousers that echoed

Rowena's casual elegance.

Dana wondered if they sat around looking beautiful all the time. Something else to think about, she supposed. Like did they ever have bad hair days, indigestion, sore feet?

Or were those things too mundane for gods living in the mortal world? "We were just enjoying the fire, and a glass of wine. You'll join us?"

Rowena asked.

"Sure, thanks." Welcoming the heat, Dana walked toward the snapping fire. "You

guys hang like this every evening?

In the process of pouring wine, Pitte stopped, frowned at her. "Hang?"

"Hang out. You know, sit around in great clothes, drinking fine wine out of, what

is that, Baccarat?"

"I believe it is." Pitte finished pouring, offered the glass

106

to Dana. "We often take an hour or so to relax together at the end of the day."

"What about the rest of the time? Do you just putter around this place?"

"Ah. You wonder what we do to entertain ourselves." Rowena sat, patted the

cushion beside her. "I paint, as you know. Pitte spends time on our finances. He

enjoys the game of money. We read. I've enjoyed your books, Jordan."

"Thanks."

"Pitte enjoys films," Rowena added with a glance of affection toward her lover.

"Particularly ones where a great many things blow up in impressive explosions."

"So you go to the movies?" Dana prompted.

"Ordinarily no. We prefer settling in at home and watching at our leisure."

"Multiplexes," Pitte muttered. "They call them this. Like little boxes stacked end

by end. It's a pity the grand theaters have gone out of fashion."

"That's something you'd both be up on. The changes in fashion. There'd have been

a lot of that in a couple of millennia."

Rowena lifted a brow at Dana. "Yes, indeed."

"I know this sounds like small talk," Dana continued, "but I'm just trying to get a

handle on things. It occurred to me that you know everything about me. You've

had my whole lifetime to watch. Did you watch?"

"Of course. You were of considerable interest to us from the moment

you were born. We didn't intrude," Rowena added, running the jeweled chain she wore

around her neck through her fingers as she spoke. "Or interfere. I understand your

interest in us now. We are more like you than you may think and less like you than

you could possibly imagine. We can and do indulge in what you'd call human

pleasures. Food, drink, warmth, vanity. Sex. We love ..." She reached up for Pitte's

hand. "As genuinely as you. We weep and laugh. We enjoy much of what your

world offers.

107

We celebrate the generosity and resilience of the human spirit, and

mourn its darker sides."

"But while you're here, you're of neither one world nor the other. Isn't

that right?"

There was something about the way they touched each other, Jordan thought. As if

they would wither away without that small contact. "You can live as you choose to

live, but within limitations. Within the boundaries of this dimension.

Even so,

you're not of it. You might feel the heat, but you don't burn. You might sleep at

night, but when you wake in the morning, you haven't aged. The hours haven't

changed you. Millions of hours can't."

"And do you see that kind of... immortality," Pitte inquired, "as a gift?"

"No, I don't." Jordan's glance shifted to Pitte's face and held. "I see it as a curse. A

punishment, certainly, when you're locked out of your own world and spend those

millions of hours here."

Pitte's expression didn't change, but his eyes seemed to deepen, to heat.

"Then you

have excellent sight."

"I see something else clearly enough. The penalty, if Dana fails to find the key, is a

year of her life. A year of Malory's and Zoe's as well. From your standpoint that's

nothing. But it's a different matter when you're human and your life is already

finite."

"Ah." Pitte draped an arm over the mantel. "So, have you come to renegotiate our contract?"

Before Dana could speak, tell Jordan to mind his own business, he shot her a look.

"No, because Dana's going to find the key, so it won't be an issue."

"You" have confidence in your woman," Rowena said.

"I'm not his woman," Dana said quickly. "Has Kane watched us, too?"

From the

beginning of our lives?"

"I can't say," Rowena answered, then waved an impatient hand at Dana's dubious expression. "I can't. There are, as Jordan said, certain boundaries we can't cross."

108

Something has changed-we know this because he was able to draw both Malory and Flynn into dreams and to cause Flynn harm. He wasn't able, or perhaps didn't choose, to do so before."

"Tell them what he did to you."

It wasn't phrased as a request, and this time Dana's anger was sparked. But before

she could snap at Jordan, Rowena took her arm.

"Kane? What happened?"

She told them, and found that this time her voice remained steady throughout the telling. More distance, she thought, less fear.

At least there was less until she saw a flicker of fear cross Rowena's face.

She didn't care to think what it took to frighten a god.

"There wasn't any real threat, right?" Her skin was prickling, icy little ants rushing

down her back. "I mean, I couldn't have drowned when I jumped into the sea,

because the sea didn't actually exist."

"But it did," Pitte corrected. There was a grim chill to his face. A soldier's face,

Dana thought, as he watched the battle from a rise and waited for the time to draw his sword.

And she was the one down in the field, she realized, waging bloody war.

"It was conjured first by your fantasy, then by your fear. That doesn't make it less than real."

"That just doesn't make sense," she insisted. "When he had Malory in that fantasy, when she was painting, we could see her. We all saw her, just standing there in that attic."

"Her body, perhaps part of her consciousness-she has a strong mind-remained. The rest..." Rowena drew a breath. "The rest of what she was had traveled to the other side. And if harm had come to her. To her body," Rowena explained, holding out

one hand. "To what you can call her
109

essence." Then the other. "On either side, the harm would be to all of her."

"If she cut her hand in one existence," Jordan said, "it would bleed in the other."

"He could prevent it." Obviously troubled, Rowena rose to pour more wine. "If, for instance, I wished to give you a gift, a harmless fantasy, I might send you into dreams, and watch over you to keep you from harm. But what Kane does is not harmless. He does it to tempt, and to terrorize."

"Why didn't he just shove my head under the bathwater while I was out of it?"

"There are still limits. To maintain the illusion, he can't touch your corporeal body.

And as it is your mind that forms the texture of the illusion, neither can he force you to harm yourself. Lie, yes. Deceive and frighten, even persuade, but he can't make you do anything against your will."

"That's how she broke back through." It was the answer that Jordan had needed

confirmed. "First, by choosing to see it as a trick, she changed the texture, as you said, of the world. Instead of paradise, nightmare."

"Her knowledge and fear, and Kane's anger, yes," Pitte agreed. "The fruit you dropped," he said to Dana. "Your mind saw it then as rotten in the center. This was not your paradise but your prison."

"And when she dived into the sea rather than let him take what she was, rather than accept the fantasy or the nightmare, she broke through both," Jordan concluded. "So her weapon against him is staying true to herself, whatever he throws at her."

"Simply put," Pitte agreed.

"Too simply." Rowena shook her head. "He's wily and seductive. You must never underestimate him."

"He's already underestimated her. Hasn't he, Stretch?"

"I can handle myself." His easy confidence went a long way toward quieting her nerves. "What's to stop him from

110

hitting on Zoe, screwing with her while we're focused on him screwing with me?"

"She is not yet an issue for him. But precautions can be taken," Rowena mused, tapping a finger on the rim of her glass. "She can be protected, to an extent, until her time begins."

"If it begins," Pitte corrected.

"He's pessimistic by nature," Rowena smiled. "I have more faith." She walked back

to the sofa, sat on the arm with the fluid grace some women are born with.

Reaching down, she took Dana's face in her hands.

"You know the truth when you hear it. You may turn your ear from it, close your

mind to it. As my man is pessimistic, you are stubborn by nature."

"Got that in one," Jordan muttered.

"But when you choose to hear it, the truth rings clear for you. This is your gift. He

can't deceive you unless you allow it. When you accept what you already know

you'll have the rest."

"You wouldn't like to be a little more specific?"

A smile touched the corners of Rowena's mouth. "You have enough to think of for

now."

* * *

LATER, when they were alone, Rowena curled on the sofa beside Pitte, rested her

head on his shoulder and watched the fire. In the flames she studied Dana, her

hands competent on the steering wheel as she drove through the night toward the

quiet valley below the Peak.

She admired competence, hi gods and mortals.

"She worries him," she said quietly.

Pitte watched the fire, and the images in it as well. "Whom does she worry? The

soul-stealer or the story-spinner?"

Absently, for comfort, Rowena rubbed her cheek against Pitte's shoulder. "Both,

certainly. And both have

111

hurt her, though only one with intent. But a lover's blade slices deeper than any

enemy's. She worries Kane," she said, "but the man is worried for her."
"They have heat." Pitte turned his head to brush his lips over Rowena's hair. "He

should take her to bed and let the heat seal old wounds."

"So like a male, to think bedding is always the answer."

"It's a good one." Pitte gave her a little shove, and when she fell, it was onto the

big bed they shared.

She cocked an eyebrow at him. Her silver dress had melted away so that she wore

only her own skin. Such things, she knew, were one of his more playful, and

interesting, habits.

"Heat isn't enough." She spread her arms, and dozens of candles flared into flame.

"It's warmth, my love, my only love, that heals the wounded heart."

With her arms still open wide, she sat up and welcomed him to her.

* * *

DANA had hardly gotten back in the door-and kept Jordan out-had barely settled

down with Othello again and cleared her mind enough to focus on the task at

hand, when there was another knock.

Figuring Jordan had come back with some new ploy to wheedle his way in, she

ignored it.

She was, by Jesus, going to spend two hours working on this book angle, and then

she was going to think about the drive to the Peak, what had been said there. What

hadn't been said on the drive home.

If she had to think about Jordan, she sure as hell wasn't going to do it when he was

around.

He'd sniff it out of her head like a bloodhound.

There was another knock, more insistent this time. She merely bared her teeth and kept scanning the play. But the barking got her attention.

112

Realizing that she would get nowhere until the door was answered, she got up and opened it. "What the hell are you doing here? Both of you." She scowled at Flynn, then leaned down to rub Moe's floppy ears and make kissing noises.

"Did Malory kick you out? Poor baby." Her sympathetic tone turned icy as she straightened and peered at her brother. "You're not sleeping here."

"Don't plan to."

"Then what's in the bag?"

"Stuff." He squeezed inside, around his dog and his sister. "I hear you had a rough one last night."

"It was an experience, and I'm not in the mood to rehash it. It's after ten. I'm

working, then I'm sleeping."

With, she thought, every light in the apartment burning, just as she had the night before.

"Fine. Here's his stuff."

"Whose stuff?"

"Moe's. I'll haul over the big-ass bag of dog food tomorrow, but there's enough in there for his breakfast."

"What the hell are you talking about?" She looked in the bag he'd shoved into her

arms and saw a mangled tennis ball, a tattered rope, a box of dog biscuits on top of about five pounds of dry dog food.

"What the hell is this?"

"His stuff," Flynn repeated cheerfully, and grunted when Moe leaped up to plant

his paws on his shoulders. "Moe's your new temporary roommate. Well, gotta go.

See you tomorrow."

"Oh, no, you don't." She tossed the bag on a chair, beat him to the door by a step,

and threw herself against it. "You're not walking out that door without this dog."

He gave her a smile that was both mildly quizzical and wholly innocent.

"You just

said I couldn't sleep here."

"You can't. Neither can he."

"Now look, you've hurt his feelings." He looked sorrowfully at Moe, who was trying to nose his way into the bag. "It's all

right, big

guy. She didn't mean it."

"Give me a break."

"You don't know what dogs understand. Scientific tests are inconclusive." He gave

Dana a brotherly pat on the cheek. "So anyway, Moe's going to stay for a couple

weeks. Play guard dog."

"Guard dog?" She noted that Moe was now chewing on the bag. "Give me a

serious break."

Obviously not finding the brown paper to his taste, Moe wandered off to sniff for

crumbs, and Flynn sat down, stretched out his legs. He'd reconsidered his strategy

and decided that this tack was foolproof with Dana. "Okay. I'll stay and be guard

dog since you have no faith in Moe. Let's flip a coin for the bed."

"I'm the only one sleeping in my bed, and I have less faith in you than I do in that big mutt, who is currently chasing his own tail. Moe! Cut that out before you wreck my place."

She considered just tearing out her own hair when Moe bashed against a table in

his desperate attempt to latch teeth onto tail, and sent books thudding down on his head.

He gave a startled bark and scrambled toward Flynn for protection.

"Go away, Flynn, and take your klutzy dog with you."

Flynn simply lifted his legs and used Moe as a footstool. "Let's just go over our options," he began.

Twenty minutes later Dana stomped into the kitchen. She stopped short, hissed

through her teeth when she saw the contents of her trash can strewn from one end

of the floor to the other and Moe happily sprawled over the mess of it, chewing on

a wad of paper towels.

"How does he do it? How the hell did he talk me into this?" And that, she

admitted, was the mystery of Flynn Hennessy. You never knew just how he

managed to box you into the corner of his choice.

She crouched down, got nose to nose with Moe.

114

Moe rolled his eyes to the side, avoiding hers. Dana swore that if dogs could

whistle, she'd have heard the I-wasn't-doing-anything tune coming out of the dog's

mouth. "Okay, pal, you and I are going to go over the rules of the household."

He responded by licking her face, then flopping over to expose his belly.

* * *

SHE woke with the sun streaming over her face and her legs paralyzed.

The sun

was easy to explain. She'd forgotten to draw the curtains again. And her

legs

weren't paralyzed, she realized after a moment of panic. They were

trapped under

the massive bulk of Moe.

"Okay, this is no way to begin." She sat up, then shoved the dog hard."

"I said no

dogs allowed on the bed. I was very clear about that rule."

He moaned, an oddly human sound that made her lips twitch. Then he

opened one

eye. Then that eye brightened with manic joy.

"No!"

But it was too late. In one leap, he'd trapped not only her legs but her entire body.

Dancing paws pressed into her belly, her breasts, her crotch. His tongue slathered

her face with desperate love.

"Stop it! Down! Mary Mother of God!" And she was laughing

hysterically,

wrestling with him, until he leaped off the bed and raced out of the room.

"Whew." She pushed at her hair. It was definitely not the way she cared to wake,

as a rule. But for one day she could make an exception.

Now she needed coffee. Immediately.

Before she could throw back the covers, Moe bounded back in.

"No! Don't you do it! Don't you bring that horrible, disgusting ball into this bed."

115

Her usual morning speed approximated that of a snail on Valium, but one look at

the tennis ball in Moe's mouth had her moving like an Olympic sprinter. She hit the floor, causing Moe to change direction and go into a skid. He thudded against the bed frame, then, undaunted, spat the ball at her feet. "We do not play fetch the ball in the house. We do not play fetch the ball when I'm naked, which, you may notice, I am. We do not play fetch the ball before I have coffee."

He cocked his head charmingly and lifted a paw. "We're going to have to compromise. First I'll get unnaked." She went to the closet for her robe. "Then I'll have my first cup of coffee. After which I'll take you for a very, very brief walk during which you can relieve your bladder and play fetch the ball for exactly three minutes. Take it or leave it."

* * *

SHE didn't know how he did it-like master, like dog, she supposed-but she ended up spending a good twenty minutes playing with Moe in the park. This was nor her morning routine, and if there was anything that was sacrosanct to Dana, it was her morning routine. She could admit that she felt more energized and more cheerful after the interlude with the goofy dog. But she wasn't going to tell Moe that, or anyone else. He gobbled down his breakfast while she ate hers, then fortunately for all involved, plopped down for a quick morning nap while she substituted Othello for her current breakfast book.

To stay fresh, to let it all simmer in her head, she switched gears after thirty minutes, and chose one of the books on sorcery. However wily and amoral Iago was, Kane was more so-and he had power. Maybe there was a way to undermine it, or deflect it, while she searched for the key.

116

She read of white magic, and of black. Of sorcery and necromancy. And it was different, she realized as she made her notes, when you knew the fantastic you read of was real.

Not fantasy. Not lies, but truth.

She had to remember that, she thought as she closed--the book. It was essential that she remember the truth.

* * *

IT was very satisfying, Dana discovered when she was hip-deep in work at

Indulgence, to prime the dull wall with fresh white paint.

Our place, she thought.

As they painted, she briefed Zoe and Malory on her visit to the Peak and what she'd learned.

"So he can hurt us." Frowning, Zoe added more paint to the automatic roller for

Malory. "Or we can hurt ourselves. I guess that's what it really means."

"If we drift too far beyond actual reality, yeah," Dana agreed. "I think that's what it means."

"But he can't hurt us unless we allow it," Malory put in. "The trick is not to allow it, which is not as easy as it sounds."

"You don't have to tell me." The memory of her brush with Kane still made Dana shudder. "It's not just finding the last two keys, it's protecting ourselves." "And the people around us," Zoe reminded her. "He went after Flynn, too. If he tries anything with Simon- anything-I'll spend the rest of my life hunting him down."

"Don't worry, Mom." Dana reached over to squeeze Zoe's shoulder. "When your turn comes, we'll all look after Simon. We can always send Moe to protect him," she added to lighten the mood. She sent a steely look at Malory. "A true friend would've called and warned me I was about to get a dog."

117

"A true friend knew you'd sleep better at night with a dog snoring beside the bed,"

"Beside, my ass. He snuck onto the bed when I was sleeping. Which means I'd have slept through an earthquake last night, as he's not what we can call stealthy.

And Moe-proofing the apartment is no snap, just let me add. Not to mention I'm

not allowed to have dogs in my building in the first place."

"It's just for a few weeks and mostly at night," Malory reminded her.

"You did sleep better, too. I can tell by your mood."

"Maybe I did. Anyway, I should fill you in on what I'm doing about the key."

* * *

WITH the first room primed, they moved to the next and the more tedious chore of cutting in around the trim.

"Jealousy, sorcery, getting inside Kane's skin." Standing on the new stepladder,

Malory took on the task of painting the ceiling. "That's very smart."

"I think so. The answer's in a book. It's got to be. Yours dealt with painting, and

one of the daughters, the one who looks like you, is an artist. Well, a musician, but

that's an art."

Zoe glanced over. "I sure as hell hope that means I don't have to take up fencing

because my goddess carries a sword."

"She also has that cute little puppy," Malory put in.

"I can't get a dog right now. I know Simon would love one, but-oh, you were

taking my mind off the sword."

"There you go."

Dana sat back on her heels, stretched her back. "Puppy, sword-metaphors for

something. We'll figure it out when the time comes. But if we follow this theme,

Malory's key dealt with painting. Malory's dream was being an artist, but she

didn't have the chops for it..."

She stopped, considered biting her tongue in half. "Sorry. That sounded harsh."

118

"No, it didn't. It sounded true." Malory stared up at the ceiling. She seemed to have

the knack for this kind of painting. "I didn't have the talent to paint, so I directed

my energies into a career where I could be part of the art world in other ways. It

doesn't hurt my feelings, Dana."

"Okay, but you get a free kick later if you want it. Kane used Malory's desire to

paint to pull her in, to distract her from the search. But our heroine proved much too clever for him and turned the tables."

Malory inclined her head regally. "I like that part."

"It's one of my favorites," Zoe agreed. "Do you want to write, Dana?"

"No." She pursed her lips for a moment, thought about it. "No, I don't. But I have

to be around books, have them around me. I'm fascinated with the people who can and do write them."

"Including Jordan?"

"Let's not go there, at least not yet. What I'm saying is books are personal to me, the way art is to Mai. So that's why I think my key is connected to books. I've got this gut instinct that it has to do with a book I've read. Something personal again."

"I'm going to do another title search, one using 'key,' and see what books I come up with." Her brows drew together as she tried to puzzle it out. "The whole key-in-the-title angle may be too simple, too obvious, but it gives me another place to look."

"We could split it up," Malory suggested. "If you make a list of the books you think might be the one, we could divide it into three and each take a chunk."

"That would help. We don't know what we're looking for," Dana continued. "But we've got to believe we'll know it when we see it."

"Maybe you should put together a list with 'goddess' in the title, too," Malory told her. "My key had to do with the

singing goddess, from Rowena's clue. Yours might link to the goddess who walks,
or waits, in your clue."

"Good thinking." With her section of wall finished, Dana got to her feet.

"God, our

eyes are going to bleed. There's this other thing." Wanting to keep busy, she went

back to her brush roller. "Your key had to do with this place, Mai, with the way

he-or your head-transformed it into your fantasy of happy home, family, painting

in your studio. So far, mine's been a deserted tropical island. I don't think I'm

going to find its root here in the Valley."

"You don't know where you'll go next time."

Dana set down the brush and stared. "Well, gee. That's a happy thought."

Chapter Eight

SHE may have been unemployed, but Dana doubted that she'd ever worked harder

or put in longer days.

There was Moe to deal with, which she equated with having an eighty-pound

toddler on her hands. He needed to be fed, walked, scolded, entertained, and

watched like a hawk.

There was the sheer physical demand of painting for several hours a day, which

had considerably upped her respect for anyone who did it for a living.

But as Moe

came with comfort and amusement, so did the work on the building bring

satisfaction and pride.

Maybe it didn't look like much yet-they'd decided to prime all the walls before

starting on color-but when you had three determined, dedicated women working as a unit, you saw considerable progress.

There was the design and strategy of the business she would debut in a matter of

months. She had long, long lists of books, intriguing sidelines, possible styles for

shelves and tables, for glasses and cups.

121

It had been one thing to fantasize about owning a bookstore, but it was another

matter entirely to deal with the thousands of details involved in creating one.

Added to that were the hours of midnight oil she burned searching for the key.

Reading had always been a passion, but now it was a mission.

Somewhere hi a

book was the answer. Or at least the next question.

And what if the answer, or the question, was in one of the books she'd assigned to

her friends? What if they missed it because it would only resonate with her?

That way lay madness, she told herself.

On top of everything else she had to do, had to think about, had to worry about,

she had to get ready for a date. A date, she reminded herself, that she should never

have agreed to.

Talk about the road to madness.

If she canceled, Jordan would either nag and harangue her until she sliced him to

pieces with a butcher knife and spent the rest of her life in prison, or, even worse,

he'd get that smug, told-you-so look on his face and claim he'd only proven that

she was afraid to be around him.

In which case, it was back to the kitchen knife and life in the women's penitentiary.

The only choice left was to go-and to go fully armed. She would not only prove

she wasn't the least bit concerned about spending a few hours with him, she would

drive him mad while she was at it.

She knew he was a sucker for scent, so she slathered herself in perfumed body

cream before slipping into what she thought of as her tonight's-the-night underwear. Not that she would give Jordan the chance to see it, but she would

know she was wearing the sexy black bra, the lacy panties, the lace-trimmed garter

belt and sheer hose.

And they would make her feel powerful.

She checked herself in the mirror-front, back, sides. "Oh, yeah, I look just fine. Eat

your heart out, Hawke."

122

She picked up the dress she'd laid on the bed. It looked deceptively simple, one

long, fluid line of black. But when you put a body into it, everything changed.

She slipped it on, gave it a few tugs, then did another turn before the mirror.

The scoop neck took on a whole new dimension when there were breasts filling it

out, rising teasingly over the edge. The column turned seductive when the

slightest movement parted that long side slit and revealed the length of leg.

She slipped on her shoes, delighted that the stiletto heels added three inches to her

already impressive height. She'd never been sensitive about being tall. She liked it. She had Zoe to thank for the hair. She'd done it sleek and loose, with a little jeweled clip anchored between the crown and the tip of her left ear. Just another tease, Dana mused. The clip didn't do anything but sit there and sparkle. She dabbed perfume at her collarbone, in the valley between her breasts, at her wrists. Then tossed her head. "You are a dead man, pal. You are meat." It occurred to her that she was actually looking forward to the evening. It had been weeks since she'd dressed herself up for a date. Plus, she had to admit she was curious. How would Jordan handle himself? How, for that matter, would they handle each other? She wondered what it would be like to be with him, within the ritual of a date, now that they were man and woman rather than boy and girl. It was, she had to admit, exciting. Particularly exciting since she was certain he intended to win her over and she had no intention of being won. She leaned toward the mirror, slid murderous red on her lips, then dropped the tube of lipstick in her purse. She pressed her lips together, opened them again with a cocky little pop. "Let the games begin." When Jordan knocked at exactly seven-thirty, she

123

couldn't have scripted his reaction any more perfectly. His eyes widened, blurred. She actually saw the pulse in his throat jump. Then he fisted a hand and rapped it twice against his own heart as if to get it started again.

"You're trying to hurt me, aren't you?"

She angled her head. "Absolutely. How'd I do?"

"Kill shot. Am I drooling?"

Now she grinned and turned back inside to get her coat. He stepped in behind her,

leaned down and sniffed. "If I whimper, try to ..." He trailed off as he saw the

books. Piles and stacks of them beside the sofa, another stack on the coffee table, a

sea of them on her dining table.

"Jesus Christ, Dane, you need treatment."

"They're not just for reading, not that there's anything wrong with that. They're for

work and for research. I'm playing an angle on the key and I'm preparing to open a

bookstore."

She slipped into the coat, trying not to be miffed that he now appeared to be more

interested in the books than in how incredible she looked.

"The Key to Rebecca, Key Witness, A House Without a Key. I see where you're

going here. The Key to Sexual Fulfillment?" He sent her a long, smirking look.

"Shut up. Are we going to eat?"

"Yeah, yeah. You've got your work cut out for you." He crouched down, began

flipping through pages. "You want me to take some of these?"

"I've already split the load with Malory and Zoe." She knew he'd start reading in a

moment; he wouldn't be able to help himself. In that area, they were identical

twins.

"That's enough. Hungry here."

"What else is new?" He set a book back on a tower of its fellows, straightened and

took another good long look at her. "Wowzer."

"Aw, that's so sweet. Are we going?"

He moved to the door to open it for her. "Where's Moe?"

124

"Romping in the park with his best friend. Flynn's dropping him off before he goes

home. Where are we eating?"

"Just get in the car, Miss One Track Mind. You'll get fed. How's the painting

brigade doing?" he asked once she was settled and he was behind the wheel.

"We rock. Seriously. I can't get over how much we're getting done. And I have the

body aches to prove it."

"Anything you want me to rub, just let me know."

"That's a kind and selfless offer, Jordan."

"Just the kind of guy I am."

She crossed her legs, making sure the move was slow and parted the slit of her

dress well up to her thigh. "But I have Chris to take care of that for me."

His gaze traveled down, all the way to the sharp heel of her shoe, then back up

again. "Chris?" He didn't snarl it, but he wanted to.

"Mmm-hmm."

"And who's Chris?"

"A very talented massage therapist with magic hands." She stretched, as if under

those magic hands, and added a quiet little moan. Oh, yes, she thought at the

quick hitch of Jordan's breathing, she had entirely new weaponry to aim at him

this time around.

"A recommendation from Zoe," she added. "Zoe's going to offer a variety of

treatments in the salon."

"And would that be Christine or Christopher?"

She shrugged. "I got a neck and shoulder treatment this afternoon, a kind of

audition. Chris passed with flying colors." She frowned when he zoomed past the

town limits. "We're not eating in town?"

He couldn't breathe without breathing whatever she'd doused herself in to drive

him crazy. And by the way, he thought, in case he'd forgotten she had legs that

went all the way to her ears, she was going out of her way to remind him.

If his voice was a bit tight, there were good reasons for it. "I'm feeding you and

paying the bill. Venue's my pick."

125

"It better be worthy of my outfit and my appetite, or you'll be paying more than the

bill."

"I remember your appetites." He ordered himself to relax. She might be playing a

hell of a game, but he hadn't come up to bat yet. "So tell me, what is the key to

sexual fulfillment?"

"Read the book. You tell me, what pops into your head when you think of 'key'

when it comes to literature?"

"Locked-door mysteries."

"Hmm. Could be another angle. How about goddess, other than in mythology?"

"Your femme fatale character. Like the mystery woman in The Maltese Falcon."

"How is she a goddess?"

"She has the power to weave spells over a man, with sex, beauty, and lies."

"Huh." Deliberately, she skimmed her fingers down the long curve of her hair.

"Not bad. Something to think about." As she did, she lost track of direction and time. It was nearly eight when she brought herself back and blinked at the big white house tucked into the hillside.

Batter up, Jordan thought as he saw her eyes go wide.

"Luciano's?" Her jaw dropped. "It takes a congressional edict to get a reservation at

Luciano's this time of year. You have to book weeks in advance out of season, but

in October you can't get in even by donating blood."

"You'll only have to give them a pint." He climbed out, tossed his keys to the valet.

"I've always wanted to eat here. Way out of my league."

"I tried to get us in for your birthday once. They didn't laugh at me, but it was

close."

"You couldn't have afforded to ..." 'She trailed off, and couldn't help but go to goo

inside. It was just the sort of thing he'd have done, she remembered.

Unexpectedly, recklessly done. "It was a nice thought," she told him and kissed his

cheek.

126

"This time I pulled it off." He shocked her speechless by lifting her hand to his

lips. "Happy birthday. Better late than never."

"You're being charming. Why are you being charming?"

"It goes with your outfit." And still holding her hand, he led her up the steps.

The restaurant had once been the mountain getaway of a Pittsburgh family of

some wealth and influence. Dana didn't know if it qualified as a mansion, but it certainly met all the requirements for villa with its columns and balconies and porticos.

The grounds were lovely, and in spring and summer, even early fall, alfresco

dining was offered in the courtyard so patrons could enjoy the gardens and the

views along with a superbly prepared meal.

The interior had been restored, and maintained the elegance and ambience of a well-appointed home.

The entrance hall offered marble floors, Italian art, and cozy seating areas. Dana

barely had time to absorb the light, the color, before the maitre d' hurried over to greet them.

"Mr. Hawke, we're so pleased you could join us this evening. Signorina, welcome

to Luciano's. Your table's ready if you'd like to be seated. Or if you prefer I'll have you shown into our lounge,"

"The lady's hungry, so we'll take the table, thanks."

"Of course. Shall I take your wrap?"

"Sure."

But Jordan beat the maitre d', and with a trail of fingertips along her shoulders,

slipped her coat off. It was whisked away, and they were led up the grand staircase

and into what she realized was a private room already prepared with a single table

for two.

A waiter materialized with champagne.

"As you requested," the maitre d' said. "Is this suitable for your evening?"

147

"It's perfect," Jordan told him.

"Bene. If you wish for anything, you have only to ask. Please, enjoy.

Buon

appetite."

He slipped away, leaving them alone.

"When you pull it off," Dana said after a moment, "you really pull it off."

"No point in doing things halfway." He lifted his glass, tapped it gently against

hers. "To moments. Past, present, future."

"That seems safe enough to drink to." She sipped. "Jeez. You know what old Dom

meant about drinking stars when he had his first sip of the bubbly stuff."

She took

another sip, then studied him over the rim. "Okay, I'm impressed. You're quite the

big cheese these days, aren't you, Mi Hawke?"

"Maybe, but it's more knowing to use what works. And the local boy who makes

good can usually get a table at a restaurant."

She looked around the room, so softly lit, so private, so romantic.

There were flowers and candles, not only on the table but on the antique server, on

the long, carved buffet. The room smelled of both of them, and music - something

soft with weeping violins - drifted through the air.

A low fire burned in a black marble hearth, more candles, more flowers on the

mantelpiece above it. A wide scalloped mirror reflected off it, creating a strong

sense of intimacy.

"Some table," she said at length.

"I wanted to be alone with you. Don't spoil it," he said, and covered her hand with

his before she could move it out of reach. "It's just dinner, Stretch."

"Nothing's just in a place like this."

He turned her hand over, ran his finger down the center of her palm while he

watched her face. "Then let me try my hand at romancing you. Just for one

evening. I could

128

start by telling you that just looking at you right now almost stops my heart."

Hers did a quick bounce, and then went thud. "You're pretty good at it, for a

beginner."

"Sit tight. I'll get better."

She didn't tug her hand away. It seemed wrong, a small, mean gesture when he'd

gone to such trouble to give her something special. "It's not going to mean

anything, Jordan. We're in different places than we were."

"Seems to me we're both right here. Why don't we relax and enjoy it?"

He nodded

to the waiter stationed discreetly just outside the room. "You said you were

hungry."

She took the offered menu. "You've got that one right."

* * *

IT would, Dana discovered, take considerable effort and a great deal of determination not to relax and enjoy. And it would be mean-spirited. He might

have cornered her into the date, but he'd gone out of his way to make it a memorable, even magical one.

Then there was the fact that, by his own terms, he was romancing her.

That was

something new. As long as they'd been together, as much as they'd meant to each other, old-fashioned romance had never been particularly a part of their relationship.

Oh, he'd certainly been capable of sweetness, if he was in the mood. And surprise.

But no one, not even the most sympathetic, would ever have called the Jordan

Hawke she remembered smooth or traditionally romantic.

Then again, she'd bleed his edges. They'd attracted her and they'd aroused her.

Still, she wasn't about to complain about being courted for one evening by a

charming, entertaining man who seemed intent on providing her with a dream

date.

"Tell me what you want for the bookstore."

119

She took another bite of truly incredible sea bass. "How much time do you have?"

"All you need."

"Well, first I want it to be accessible. The kind of place people feel free to stroll

into, just browse around, maybe settle in for a while and read. But at the same

tune, I don't want them to treat it like their private library. What I want to establish

is the neighborhood bookstore, where customer service is the priority, where

people like to gather."

"I wonder why no one ever tried that in the heart of the Valley before."

"I'm trying not to think about that," she admitted. "If no one did, there might be a

good reason."

"They weren't you," he said simply. "What else are you after? Are you shooting for general stock, or are you going to specialize?"

"General. I want a lot of variety, but I worked in the library long enough to know what people in this area lean toward. So certain sections-romance, mystery, local interest-will outweigh some of the more esoteric titles. I want to coordinate with the local schools, know what teachers are assigning, and see if I can get at least one book club formed within the first six months."

She picked up her wine. "And that's just for starters. Mai and Zoe and I will be working together, and ideally we'll overlap our customer base. You know, somebody comes hi for a book and thinks, Wow, look at that terrific blown-glass vase. It's just perfect for my sister's birthday. Or someone's going up to Zoe's for a haircut and picks up a paperback to read while she's getting done."

"Or they come in to look at paintings and decide they could really use a manicure."

She toasted him, sipped. "That's the plan."

"It's a good one. The three of you look good together. You fit together, complement each other. You've all got different styles, but they mesh nicely."

180

"Funny, I was thinking almost exactly that just the other day. It's like if anyone had suggested I'd be going into business-putting basically every penny I have on the line-with two women I've known only about a month, I'd have laughed my butt off. But here I am. And it's right. That's one thing I'm absolutely sure of."

"As far as the bookstore goes, I'd bet on you any day of the week."

"Save your money. I may have to borrow some before it's done. But following

along, tell me what you would look for in a good neighborhood bookstore. From a

writer's perspective."

Like Dana, he sat back, a signal to the waiter to clear. "You called me a writer

without any derogatory adjectives."

"Don't get cocky. I'm just maintaining the mood of the evening."

"Then let's order dessert and coffee, and I'll tell you."

* * *

BY the time they were done, she was wishing she'd brought a notebook.

He was

good, she had to give him that. He touched on aspects she hadn't thought of,

expanded on others that she had.

When they spoke of books themselves, she realized how much she'd missed that

perk. Having someone who shared her absolute devotion to stories. To devouring

and dissecting them, to savoring and wallowing in them.

"It's a nice night," he said as he helped her to her feet. "Why don't we walk around

the grounds before we drive back?"

"Is that your way of saying that I ate so much I need to walk it off?"

"No. It's my way of stretching out the time I have alone with you."

"You really have gotten better at this," she replied as he led her from the room.

131

Her coat reappeared nearly as quickly as it had been whisked away.

And, she

noted, Jordan didn't miss a beat when the martre d' presented one of his books and

asked to have it signed.

He did that well, too, she thought. He kept it light, friendly, added some casual

chatter and his thanks for the evening.

"How does it feel?" she asked when they'd stepped outside. "When someone asks

you to sign a book?"

"A hell of a lot better than it does if they don't give a damn."

"No, seriously. Don't brush the question off. What's it like?"

"Satisfying." Absently, he smoothed down the collar of her coat.

"Flattering.

Surprising. Unless they've got a crazed look in their eye and an unpublished

manuscript under their arm."

"Does that happen?"

"Often enough. But mostly it just feels good. Hey, here's somebody who's read my

stuff, or is about to. And they think it'd be cool if I signed it." He shrugged.

"What's not good about that?"

"That's not very temperamental of you."

"I'm not a temperamental guy."

She snorted. "You always used to be."

"You used to be argumentative and pigheaded." He smiled broadly when she

scowled at him. "See how we've changed?"

"I'm just going to let that go, because I've had a really good time." She breathed

deep as they wandered a bricked path, and looked up at the thick slice of waxing

moon. "Into week two," she murmured.

"You're doing fine, Stretch."

She shook her head. "I don't feel like I'm getting to the meat of it. Not yet. The

days are going by really fast. I'm not panicked or anything," she added quickly,

"but I've got

132

serious concerns. So much is depending on me. People I care about. I'm afraid I'll

let them down. Do you know what I mean?"

"Yes. You're not alone in this. The brunt may be on you, but you're not carrying all

the weight." He laid his hands on her shoulders, drew her toward him a little, until

her body rested against his. "I want to help you, Dana."

She fit well with him. She always had. And her realization of that made little

warning bells sound in some dim part of her brain. "We already know you're

connected, somehow or other."

"I want more." He bent his head to brush his lips over her shoulder.

"And I want you."

"I've got enough to worry about right now."

"Whether it worries you or not isn't going to change a thing." He turned her to face

him. "I'm still going to want you. You're still going to know it." His lips curved as

he ran his hands up and down her arms. "I've always liked that look."

"What look?"

"That mildly irritated look you get when somebody gives you a problem to work

out. The one that puts this little crease right here." He touched his lips to her

forehead, just between her eyebrows.

"I thought we were taking a walk."

"We did. Now I'd say this evening calls for one more thing."

He loved the way her lips curled just as much as he loved the flicker of surprise

over her face when instead of kissing her, he slid her into a slow, swaying dance.

"Pretty clever," she murmured, but she was moved.

"I always liked dancing with you. The way everything lines up. The way I can

smell your hair, your skin. The way, if I get close enough, look close enough, I can

see myself in your eyes. Your eyes always did me in. I never told you that, did I?"

133

"No." She felt herself tremble, and the warning bells were lost under the thunder of

her own heart.

"They did. Still do. Sometimes, when we managed to spend the night together, I'd

wake up early to watch you sleep. Just so I could see you open your eyes."

"It's not fair." Her voice shook. "It's not fair to tell me something like that now."

"I know. I should've told you then. But now's all I've got."

He touched his lips to hers, rubbed softly. Nipped gently. He felt her body slide

toward surrender, and fought the urge to plunder.

He went slowly, for both of them, savoring what they'd once devoured, lingering

where once they'd rushed. In the starlight, with her arms lifting to come around

him, he wouldn't allow himself to demand. Instead, he seduced.

He was still circling her in a dance. Or was it just that her head was spinning? His

lips were warm, and patient, all the more arousing with the hints of heat and

urgency she sensed strapped down inside him.

She sighed, drew him closer. And let him take her deeper.

Soft, slow, moist. The chill of the air against her heated skin, the scent of the night, the whisper of her name through lips moving, moving over her own.

If all the years between had formed a gulf between them, this one kiss in a deserted autumn garden began to forge the bridge.

It was he who drew back, then shook her to the core by grasping both of her

hands, bringing them to his lips. "Give me a chance, Dana."

"You don't know what you're asking. No, you don't," she said before he could

speak. "And I don't know the answer yet. If you want one that matters, you're

going to have to give me time to figure it out."

"Okay." He kept her hands in his, but stepped back. "I'll

134

wait. But I meant what I said before, about helping you. It hasn't anything to do with this."

"I have to think about that, too."

"All right."

But there was one thing she knew, Dana realized as they walked back for his car.

She wasn't still in love with him. They were, as he'd said, different people now.

And what she felt for him now made the love she'd had for the boy seem as pale

and thin as morning mist.

* * *

JORDAN let himself into the house, switched off the porch light. It had been a

very long time, he reflected, since anyone had left a light on for him.

His choice, of course. That was what everything came down to. He'd chosen to

leave the Valley, to leave Dana, and his friends and all that was familiar. It had been the right choice; he would stand by that. But he could see now that his

method of making it had been the flaw. The flaw that had left a crack in what had

been. Just how did a man go about building something new on a faulty foundation?

He started toward the steps, then stopped as Flynn came down them.

"Waiting up for me, Dad? Did I miss curfew?"

"I see your night on the town put you in a cheery mood. Why don't we step back

into my office?"

Without waiting for assent, Flynn strolled back to the kitchen. He took a look

around. Okay, it was a hideous room, even he could see that. The ancient copper-tone appliances, the ugly cabinets and linoleum that possibly had looked

fresh and jazzy in his grandfather's generation.

But he still couldn't visualize how it could, or would, look when Malory got done

with it. No more than he could understand why the prospect of ripping it apart and

putting it back together made her so happy.

135

"The guys are coming in Monday to bomb this place."

"Not a moment too soon," Jordan commented.

"I was going to get around to it, sooner or later. It wasn't like I was using it. But

since Malory, stuff actually gets cooked in here." He bumped the stove with his

foot. "She has a deep and violent hatred for this appliance. It's kind of scary."

"You brought me back here to talk about Malory's obsession with kitchen

appliances?"

"No. I wanted cookies. Malory has this rule against eating them in bed. This is

something else I can't figure," he continued as he got a bag of Chips Ahoy out of

the cupboard. "But I'm an easygoing guy. You want milk?"

"No." ,

His friend was wearing gray sweats and a T-shirt that might have been new

during his sophomore year of college. His feet were bare, his expression easy.

Looks, Jordan knew, could be very deceiving.

"And you're not easygoing, Hennessy. You pretend to be easygoing so you can get

your own way."

"I'm not eating these in bed, am I?"

"Small potatoes, son. You got the woman in your bed."

"Yeah." Grinning, Flynn poured a glass of milk, then sat down, stretched out his

legs. "I do. Of course, she's up there reading instead of offering me intriguing and

varied sexual favors, but I can bide my time."

Jordan sat. Flynn, he knew from long experience, would get to his point eventually. "So, you want to talk about your sex life? Is this going to be a bragging

session, or are you looking for advice?"

"I'd rather do it than brag about it, and I'm doing just fine on my own.

But thanks

for the offer." He dunked a cookie. "So, how's Dana?"

And there would be the point, Jordan thought. "A little anxious about the task at

hand, I'd say, but diving in headfirst. You must have seen the mountain range of

books she's hiking through when you dropped off Moe."

"Yeah, I got eyestrain just thinking about reading half of them. And otherwise?"

"It looks like she's steadied herself after what happened to her the other night. She

may be spooked by it, but she's just as curious. You know how she is."

"Mmm-hmm."

"Why don't you just ask me how things are with us?"

"And pry into your private and personal lives? Me?"

"Up yours, Hennessy."

"Wow, that was so creative, so succinct. I immediately see why you're a successful

novelist."

"Sideways." And though he had absolutely no desire for one, Jordan pulled a

cookie from the bag. "I screwed up with her, all those years ago. 'I'm going, it's

been fun, see you around.'"

It caused a low burn in his gut to remember it now.

"Maybe not that cut and dried, but close enough." He bit into the cookie as he

studied his friend's face. "Did I screw up with you, too?"

"Maybe some." Flynn nudged Malory's pretty candle aside so he could move the

cookie bag between them. "I can't say I didn't feel a little deserted when you took

off, but I got why you had to leave. Hell, I was planning on doing the same

myself."

"The business exec, the struggling writer, and the dedicated reporter.

Hell of a

trio."

"Yeah, we all got there, too, didn't we? One way or the other. I never left the

Valley to do it, but I thought I was going to, so I could look at you, and Brad, as

sort of the advance guard. But then again, I wasn't sleeping with you."
"She was in love with me."

Flynn waited a beat, absorbed the baffled frustration on Jordan's face.

"What, did
that lightbulb just go off? You've got some faulty wiring in there, pal."

"I knew she loved me." Disgusted, Jordan shoved up to

137

get a glass of milk after all. "Hell, Flynn, we all loved each other. We
were as

much family as any who share blood. I didn't know it was the big L for
her. How

the hell is a guy supposed to know that sort of thing unless the woman
looks him

in the eye and says, 'I'm in love with you, you asshole.' Which would,"
he

continued, working up to fury, "have been something you'd expect from
Dana.

That's just how she does things. But she didn't, so I didn't know. And I'm
the slug

because of it."

Because he'd been concerned by Jordan's steady cool, the spike of
temper relieved

him. "Yeah, but you're a slug for a lot of reasons. I could write up a list."

"The one I'd write up on you would be longer," Jordan muttered.

"Great, a contest." Not just angry, Flynn noted as he studied Jordan's
face, but

unhappy. Still, it had to be finished out, had to be said.

"Look, when Lily dumped me and took off for fame and fortune in the
big bad

city, it hurt. And I wasn't in love with her. You and Brad had that one
right. But I

thought I was, I was ready to be, and her brushing me off messed me up.
Dana

was in love with you. You've got to expect that your going, whatever
your reasons,

messed her up."

Jordan sat again, thoughtfully broke a cookie in two. "You're telling me not to

mess her up again."

"Yeah, that's what I'm telling you."

Chapter Nine

DANA tried working off her sexual and emotional frustration with the books. She

focused on the goal, and spent half the night sifting through data, words, notes,

and her own speculations about the location of the key.

Her primary reward was a massive headache.

What little sleep she managed to get was restless and unsatisfying. When even

Moe failed to perk up her morning mood, she decided to give physical labor a try.

She dropped Moe back at Flynn's by simply opening the front door with her key

and letting him bullet inside. Since it was still short of nine of a Sunday morning,

she imagined the household was sleeping.

In her current mood, the machine-gun barking that sprayed through the quiet as

Moe charged up the stairs made her lips curve in a dark, wicked smile.

"You go, Moe," she cheered, shut the door, and strolled back to her car.

139

She drove directly to the building. Indulgence, she corrected herself as she parked.

It was going to be Indulgence, so she needed to start thinking of it that way instead

of as "the house" or "the building."

When she unlocked the door and stepped inside, the strong smell of fresh paint hit

her. It was a good smell, she decided. The smell of progress, of newness, of

accomplishment.

Maybe the white primer wasn't pretty, but it was sure as hell bright, and looking at

it, she could see just how far they'd come already.

"So let's keep going."

She pushed up her sleeves and headed to the supplies and tools.

It occurred to her that this was the first time, the only time, she'd been alone here.

On the heels of that came the thought that maybe she was asking for trouble being

alone in a place where Kane had already wielded his sorcery.

She glanced uneasily up the steps. And thought of cold blue mist. As if the chill of

it crept over her skin, she shuddered.

"I can't be afraid to be here." The way her voice echoed made her wish she'd

brought along a radio. Anything to fill the silence with normal sound.

Won't be afraid to be here, she corrected herself as she opened a can of paint. How

could she, or any of them, make this place their own if they were afraid to come

into it alone?

There were bound to be times when one of them came in early or stayed late. The

three of them couldn't be attached at the hip. She-all of them-would have to get

used to the quiet of the place, and the settling noises. Normal quiet, normal noises,

she assured herself. Hell, she liked being alone and having a big, empty house all

to herself. It was tailor-made Dana time.

The memory of Kane's nasty games wasn't going to scare her off.

140

And since she was alone, she didn't have to compete for the super paint machine.

Still, as she began to work she wished she could hear Malory's and Zoe's voices, as she had before, turning all those empty rooms into something bright and cheerful.

She comforted herself that they'd finished priming Malory's section and had a good start on hers. It would be a kick to finish her own space with her own hands.

She could begin to play with different setups in her head. Should she shelve mysteries here, or was this a better spot for nonfiction? Local interest? Wouldn't it be fun to display coffee-table books on, ha ha, a coffee table?

Maybe she could find an old breakfront somewhere for the cafe' section. She could

display tins of tea, mugs, books. Should she go with those cute round tables that reminded her of an ice cream parlor, or the more substantial square ones?

Wouldn't this room be the perfect place to set up a cozy reading corner, or would it

be smarter to use that space for a small children's play area?

It was therapeutic to watch the clean white paint cover the dull beige, stroke by

stroke marking the room as her own. No one could push her out of here as she'd

been pushed out of the library. She was working for herself this time, and setting the rules herself.

No one could cut her off from this dream, from this love, as she'd been cut off

from other dreams. From other loves.

"Do you think it matters? A little shop in a little town? Will you work, struggle,

worry, pour your mind and your heart into something so meaningless?
And why?

Because you have nothing else.

"But you could."

She felt the cold shiver over her skin. It made her breath come too fast,
tightened
the muscles of her stomach toward pain. She continued to paint, guiding
the roller
over the

141

wall, listening to the faint hum of the motor. She couldn't seem to stop.

"It matters to me. I know what I want."

"Do you?"

He was there, somehow there. She could sense him in the chill. Perhaps
he was
the chill.

"A place of your own. You thought you had one before, all those years
of work, of

serving others. Yet does anyone care that you're gone?"

It was a well-aimed arrow. Had anyone even noticed she was no longer
at the

library? All the people she'd worked with, worked for? All the patrons
she'd

helped? Had she been so replaceable that her absence hadn't caused a
single
ripple?

Hadn't she mattered at all?

"You gave the man your heart, your loyalty, but he cast you off without
a thought.

How much did you matter to him?"

Not enough, she thought.

"I can change that. I can give him to you. I could give you a great many
things.

Success?"

The shop was full of people. The shelves were filled with books. The pretty tables were crowded with customers sipping tea, having conversations. She saw a little boy sitting cross-legged on the floor in the corner with a copy of *Where the Wild Things Are* open in his lap.

Everything about the scene spoke of pleasure-the combination of relaxation and brisk business.

The walls were exactly the right shade, she thought. Malory had been on the money there. The light was good, made everything friendly, and all those wonderful books temptingly arranged, on shelves, on displays. She wandered like a ghost, passing through the bodies of people who browsed or bought, who sat or stood. She saw familiar faces, the faces of strangers, heard the voices, smelled the scents.

142

Attractive and intriguing sidelines were set up here and there. Yes, yes, those were the note cards she'd decided to carry. And the bookmarks, the bookends. Wasn't

that the perfect reading chair? Roomy, broken in, welcoming.

It was very clever to use the kitchen as the hub of the three enterprises, with

books, candles, lotions, and art all together to illustrate how nicely each complemented the others.

It was her vision, she realized. Everything she was hoping for.

"You'll enjoy it, of course, but it won't be enough."

She turned. He was there. It didn't surprise her in the least to see Kane standing

beside her as people moved around them, through them.

Who were the ghosts? she wondered distantly.
He was dark and handsome, almost romantically so. The black hair framed a strong and compelling face. His eyes smiled into hers, but even now she could see something frightening lurking behind them.

"Why won't it be enough?"

"What will you do at the end of the day? Sit alone with only your books for company? Alone when everyone else gathers with their families? Will any of them

give you a single thought after they walk out the door?"

"I have friends. I have family."

"Your brother has a woman, and the woman has him. You're not part of that, are

you? The other has a son, and you'll never be inside what they have.

They'll leave

you, as everyone else has done."

His words were like darts in the heart, and as she bled from them she saw him

smile again. Almost kindly.

"I can make him stay." He spoke gently now, as one did to the wounded.

"I can

make him pay for what he did to you, for his carelessness, for his refusal to know

what you needed from him. Wouldn't you like him to love you as he has loved no

other? Then, at your whim, you can keep him or discard him?"

143

She was in a room she didn't recognize, yet somehow knew. A large bedroom,

saturated with color. Deep blue walls, an enormous bed covered in a ruby

comforter, mounded with jewel-toned pillows. There was a generous sitting area,

with two wing chairs facing a snapping fire. It was here that she sat, with Jordan

kneeling at her feet. Her hands were clutched in his.

And his trembled.

"I love you, Dana. I never knew I could feel like this, as if there's no point in

taking the next breath unless you're with me."

It was wrong. Wrong. His face never looked weak and pleading. "Stop it."

"You have to listen." His voice urgent, he buried his head in her lap.

"You have to

give me a chance to show you, to prove to you how much I love you.

The biggest

mistake of my life was leaving you. Nothing I've done, nothing I've touched since

has meant anything. I'll do anything you want." He lifted his head and with some

horror, she caught the gleam of tears in his eyes. "Be anything you want.

If you'll

only forgive me, let me spend every minute of every day for the rest of my life

worshiping you."

"Get the hell away from me!" Shocked, panicked, she shoved at Jordan, knocking

him back as she scrambled to her feet.

"Kick me. Beat me. I deserve it. Just let me stay with you."

"Do you think this is what I want?" She shouted it as she spun in a circle. "Do you

think you can control me by making pictures out of my thoughts? You don't

understand what I want, and that's why I'll beat you. No deal, asshole.

And this is

not only a lie, it's pathetic."

The fury in her voice echoed even when she found herself standing in the empty

room with the paint roller on the floor at her feet.

144

Scrawled on the white wall in oily black was the message:

Drown thyself!

"Fat chance, you bastard." Though her hands shook, she picked up the roller and

covered the black with fresh white primer.

Then they steadied, and her fingers dug in on the handle of the roller.

"Wait a minute, wait a minute!"

Her mind whirling, she dropped the roller with a splatter of paint, grabbed her bag

and ran as though the gods were chasing her.

Minutes later, she charged into her apartment. She tossed her purse aside and

grabbed the library copy of Othello.

"Drown thyself, drown thyself.' It's in here." She flipped pages, frantically pulling

the scene and context into her mind as she searched for the quote.

It was one of Iago's lines, when he was doing one of his numbers on Roderigo. She

knew that line.

When she found it, she sat down on the floor." 'It is a lust of the blood and a

permission of the will,'" she read aloud. "'Come, be a man. Drown thyself! drown

cats and blind puppies.'"

She fought for calm.

A lust of the blood and a permission of the will. Yes, that described Kane's vicious

acts.

Jealousy, guile, betrayal, and ambition. What Iago knew, what Othello was

ignorant of. Kane as Iago? The god-king as Othello. The king hadn't killed, but

still the daughters-those he loved-were lost to him through lies and ambition.

And the play-surely this play had beauty, truth, courage. Was it the key? Ordering herself to be methodical, she paged through the book, searched its

binding. Setting it aside, she found
145

her own copy and did the same. She forced herself to sit again, to read through the entire scene.

There were other copies of the play. She would go to the mall bookstore, search

through those. She could hit the library again on Monday. Rising, she began to pace.

There were probably dozens of copies of Othello in various forms around the

Valley. She would go to the schools, the college. She'd knock on damn doors if she had to.

"Drown thyself, my ass," she repeated and scooped up her purse. She would drive to the mall right now.

She'd already wrenched open the door when it struck her. Her own fury knocked

her two steps back before she slammed the door shut again.

She was being a fool, a mark. An idiot. Who had written the words on the wall?

Kane. A liar quoting a liar. It wasn't a clue. It was misdirection. Something to have

her running off on a tangent. Exactly as she had done.

"God damn it!" She flung her purse across the room. "Outright lies or twisted truth?

Which is it?"

Resigned, she marched across the room to retrieve her purse. She had to find out,
so it looked like she was taking that trip to the mall after all.

* * *

SHE was, Dana thought when she arrived home, probably as calm as she was going to get after spending the morning on what she was certain was a wild-goose chase. Still, she'd be happier when Malory and Zoe arrived. If nothing else, a girlfriend afternoon would cheer her up. They'd have some food, they'd talk. And when Dana had called and said she needed them to come, Zoe had promised pedicures. Not a bad deal. She carried the Chinese food she'd picked up into the kitchen, set it on the counter. Then just stood there for a moment.

146

All right, she admitted, maybe she wasn't calm, maybe she wasn't steady. Not quite yet. And her head was screaming from the echoes of the morning fear, the frustration that had followed. She walked to the bathroom, took a bottle of Extra-Strength Tylenol out of the medicine cabinet, and washed two down with tap water. Maybe she should have opted for a nap instead of company. But despite the headache, the vague nausea, this was one time she didn't want to be alone. She nearly flew to the door at the knock. "Are you all right?" Zoe stepped in, dropped the bags she carried on the floor, then gathered Dana in her arms. "I'm sorry it took me so long to get here."

"It's okay. I'm all right." No, Dana realized, this was much better than a nap. "I'm

just really glad you're here. What about Simon?"

"Flynn took him. It was really nice. He and Jordan are taking Simon over to

Bradley's. He can run around with Moe, play with guys, eat junk food, watch

football. Simon's thrilled. Isn't Mai here yet? She left before I did."

"Right behind you." Malory came hurrying down the hall, then held up a bakery

box before she stepped inside the apartment. "I made a stop. Brownies-double

fudge."

"I love you guys." Dana's voice broke as she said it and, appalled, she pressed her

fingers to her eyes. "Oh, Jesus, I'm in worse shape than I thought. It's been a very

crappy day so far."

"Sweetie, you come sit down." Taking charge, Zoe drew her across the room to the

sofa. "You just relax for a minute. I'm going to fix you something to eat."

"I got Chinese. In the kitchen."

"That's fine. You just take it easy, and Malory and I will take care of everything."

They fixed plates, brewed tea, tucked a throw over her

147

legs, and generally did all the things women instinctively know how to do to offer

comfort.

"Thanks. I mean it. I didn't realize I was that close to cracking. Bastard really got

to me."

"Tell us what happened." Malory stroked Dana's hair.

"I went over to our place, to paint. I woke up cranky and needed something to do."

She slid a glance at Malory. "Sorry about siccing Moe on you so early."

"Not a problem."

"So." She soothed her throat with tea. "I started painting. It felt good, and I was

thinking about how everything was going to look. Then he was there."

She started to tell them, as coherently as she could, and Zoe interrupted with an

indignant oath.

"That's just bullshit! That's just a lie. Of course you matter. He doesn't know a

damn thing about it."

"He's just playing on my weaknesses. I know it. Leaving the library bothered me,

more than I've been willing to admit. I guess I've been feeling like what I did there

didn't really matter to anyone but me. He uses things like that, then makes them

bigger, more hurtful."

She picked up her tea again and told them how he'd transformed the rooms into

her finished bookstore. "It was my vision of it," Dana said. "One I hadn't completely realized I had. Not just the way it looked but the way it felt, too. And,

of course, loaded with customers."

Her dimples made a brief appearance in her cheeks. "He made it seem like it

couldn't be that way unless he did it for me. That was a mistake, because it can be.

Okay, maybe not bursting at the seams with customers, but the way it looked, the

way it felt. It can be that way because it's mine. It's ours. And we'll make it that

way."

"Damn straight." Seated on the floor at her feet, Zoe gave Dana's knee a squeeze.

"Then he shifted to Jordan. I've got to have a brownie now." She leaned forward

and took one off the plate that

148

Malory had loaded with them. "There's this fabulous bedroom, one of my dream

rooms, you know? The place you build in your head if you could have a room done

any way you want it? And Jordan's kneeling at my feet, like a supplicant. He's all

but in tears, telling me how he loves me, how he can't live without me.

All this

junk he would never say in a million years. The kind of thing I've had him say in

my head, so I could kick him in the teeth after. Payback stuff."

She blew out a breath. "Jeez, he's even telling me to kick him, beat him, whatever." She broke off at the snicker and aimed a look at Zoe. Then her lips

twitched. "Okay, maybe it is funny when you think about it. The Hawke, weeping

at my feet, begging me to let him spend his life worshiping me."

Malory decided it was time for a brownie as well. "What was he wearing?"

After one long pause, Dana burst out laughing. All the aches, the tension, the

illness vanished. "Thanks. Man, when I think I was next to sobbing like a baby. I

was even feeling guilty because the deal with Jordan was close to a couple I used

to toy around with. How he would realize his horrible mistake, come crawling

back and beg. It seems satisfying in your head, you know. But let me tell you,

when it really happens-or seems to-it's just horrible. So, basically, I told Kane he could kiss my ass, and I was back where I'd started." Zoe took off Dana's shoes and began to rub her feet. "You had a pretty lousy morning."

"There's one more thing. There was writing on the wall, in this greasy black.

'Drown thyself!' I painted over it."

"That's horrible. He was trying to make you remember the island, the storm," Zoe

muttered. "He's just huffing and puffing, that's all. He couldn't even make you

think anything he did this morning was real. You knew it was him all along."

149

"I don't think he wanted it any other way," Dana mused. "I think he was trying a

new line of attack. But the writing? Not about the island. It's a line from Othello. I

recognized it almost immediately, just as I've now realized he knew I would. I

went running out of our place like a maniac to get back here and look it up. To

look for the key in the book."

"It's from a book?" Zoe swiveled around to pick up one of the copies from the

coffee table. "I don't know how you'd remember something like that. It's a real

talent. But why would Kane give you a clue to the key?"

"Now, quick wit-that's a real talent." Dana sighed. "I got suckered in. All I could

think was that I knew the line, and how I'd been focused on that play, with the way

Iago mirrored Kane in so many ways. So I went baring off, half-cocked, sure the

key was going to fall right into my hot little hand."

She flopped back against the seat. "Even when the light finally dawned, I just had

to follow through. Hence, half a day wasted chasing the wild goose."

"It's not wasted if you figured it out. You knew he was lying about the bookstore,"

Malory pointed out. "Know the truth from his lies? Isn't that how it went? You did.

And you realized he'd written a kind of lie to throw you off. But if you hadn't

followed through, you wouldn't be sure."

"I guess. I'm still going to be snatching at every copy of that play I come across."

"I'll tell you something important you figured out today." Malory patted her knee.

"You knew the truth was we're in this together, so you called us. And you know,

however satisfying the fantasy might be when you're hurt or mad, you don't want

Jordan to be a lapdog."

"Well... maybe just for a couple of days. Especially if Zoe can teach him how to

give a foot rub." She leaned her head back, tried to relax.

"The thing is ... I'm in love with him. Stupid jerkoff."

150

She let out a long, long sigh. "I don't know what the hell I'm going to do about it."

Malory picked up the plate. "Have another brownie."

* * *

If she dreamed, Dana didn't remember it when she woke in the morning. And

when she woke, the drum of rain and the gloom had her turning over, with the

plan to go directly back to sleep.

Moe had other ideas.

Without much choice, she threw on clothes, added a fielder's cap and her oldest

boots. Choosing a mug of coffee over an umbrella, she walked Moe in the rain and

revved up her system with caffeine.

They were both soaked when the deed was done, forcing her to drag him into the

bathroom. He whined, cried, tried to dig his paws into the floor as if she were

taking him to slaughter.

By the time she'd toweled him off, she smelled as much like wet dog as he did.

A shower and another hit of coffee helped. She was just about to decide which one

of her books to settle in with for the rainy morning when her phone rang.

Ten minutes later, she was hanging up the phone and grinning down at Moe.

"You know who that was? That was Mr. Hertz. You may not be acquainted with

Mr. Hertz or Mr. Foy, who are involved in the longest-running trivia contest in our

fine county. Apparently, the contestants assumed yours truly was on vacation and

therefore unable to play master of ceremonies in my usual fashion."

Amused and ridiculously delighted, she walked into the kitchen to pour her third

cup of coffee. "However, this morning Mr. Foy stopped into the library and was

informed I was no longer on staff."

She leaned back on the counter, sipped coffee as Moe

151

appeared to listen with avid attention. "Questions were asked and answered,

mostly answered by the detestable Sandi. Mr. Foy, according to Mr. Hertz, gave the opinion that my departure was, quote, a downright, dirty shame, unquote, and vacated the premises."

As if riveted, Moe cocked his head and panted.

"Shortly thereafter, the two trivia aficionados held an informal meeting over at the

Main Street Diner and decided that if the powers that be at the Pleasant Valley

Library didn't appreciate a treasure such as myself, they no longer wished to have

that institution involved in their daily information pursuit. I've just been asked if I

would continue as emcee on a freelance basis."

Because it was just Moe, and he was nothing if not sympathetic, she didn't feel

embarrassed when a tear trickled down her cheek. "I know it's probably stupid to

feel this touched, but I can't help it. It's just joiice to know I've been missed."

She sniffed back the tears. "Anyway, I've got to go online and find out when Chef

Boy-Ar-Dee manufactured its first box of pizza mix." She headed off, coffee in

hand, to her desktop. "Where do they think up these things?"

* * *

IT kicked her into gear. Dana decided it was symbolic. She'd received validation

of her purpose, her place in the community. The simple fact was, the Valley was

vital to her, and this in-between stage-post-library, pre-bookstore- had left her

feeling disenfranchised.

It wasn't the amount of work she had to do but the fact that the work she'd done in the past hadn't seemed to have any significance to anyone other than herself.

She dived in with a vengeance, placing orders for books, opening accounts, ordering her displays. Her mood was lifted to the point that when she was deep

into the key books and the knock interrupted, she wasn't irritated.

152

"Time to come up for air anyway." She pulled open the door, then frowned at the

young man who stood there, holding a single red rose in a clear bud vase.

"Trolling for girls? You're pretty cute, but a little young for me."

He flushed, red as the rose. "Yes, ma'am. No, ma'am. Dana Steele?"

"That's right."

"For you." He passed her the vase, then took off.

Still frowning, Dana closed the door, then tugged off the card tied to the vase.

Reminded me of you,

Jordan

In his mind, Jordan was in the forest of the Pacific Northwest. Hunted.

He had his

wits, his will, and his need to see his woman again as his weapons. If he could

survive for the next five minutes, he could survive for ten. For ten, he could

survive an hour.

For the hunter wanted more than his life. It wanted his soul.

Fog slithered, gray snakes along the ground. The blood from the hastily bound

wound in his arm seeped through the bandage and dripped into the mist.

The pain

kept him sharp, reminded him that he had more than blood to lose.

He should have seen it for a trap. That had been his mistake. But there was no going back, no point in regrets, no point in prayers. His only option was to keep moving. And to live.

He heard a sound. To his left? A kind of whispering the fog could make when

parted by mass. He melted into the trees, pressed his back against bark. Flight, he asked himself, or fight?

"What the hell game are you playing?"

"Christ Jesus." He popped back from the world in his
153

mind, the one speeding onto the screen through the rush of his fingertips over keys.

The speed of the trip had the blood roaring in his ears as he stared at Dana.

She stood in the doorway, hands on hips, eyes full of suspicion.

"This is the little game I call writing for a living. Go away, come back later."

"I'm talking about the flower, and I've got just as much right to be here as you do.

It's my brother's house."

"And this is, currently, my room in your brother's house."

She gave it one derisive scan. There was a bed, unmade, her own childhood

dresser that she'd passed to Flynn when he'd bought the house, an open suitcase on

the floor. The desk where Jordan worked had been Flynn's during his teenage

years and was missing one of the three drawers that ran down the side. On it was a

laptop, some files and books, a pack of cigarettes, and a metal ashtray.

"Looks more like a weigh station," she commented.

"It doesn't have to be pretty." Resigned, he reached for his cigarettes.

"That's a brainless habit."

"Yeah, yeah, yeah." He lit it, deliberately blew out smoke. "Half a pack a day, and

mostly when I'm working. Get off my back. What're you riled up about, anyway? I

thought women liked getting flowers."

"You sent me a single red rose."

"That's right." He considered her more thoughtfully now. Her hair was pulled back,

so she'd been working. She hadn't bothered with makeup, so she hadn't planned on

leaving the house. She was wearing jeans, a very faded Penn State sweatshirt, and

shined black-leather boots with a stubby heel.

Which meant, he deduced from his knowledge of her, that she'd been planning to

work around the apartment,

154

then had grabbed the first pair of shoes that came to hand because she'd been in a

hurry.

And that meant the flower had done the job.

"The single-red-rose gambit is supposed to be romantic." He smiled when he said

it, just a little smugly.

She stepped into the room, skirted the suitcase. "You said it reminded you of me.

Just what's what supposed to mean?"

"It's long and sexy, and it smells good. What's the problem, Stretch?"

"Look, you went for the big splashy date Saturday. Good job. But if you think I

can be taken in by a fancy meal and a rosebud, you're sadly mistaken."

He hadn't shaved, she noted, and could have used a haircut. Damn it, she'd always

been a sucker for that heading-toward-scruffy look on him.

Then there was the expression on his face when she stepped in the door, before he'd known she was there. Half dreamy, half gone. And his mouth had been sort of grim and determined.

She had to grip the doorjamb to stop herself from rushing over and biting that mouth.

And now he was just watching her, that cocky half smile on his face. She didn't

know whether to punch him or jump him,

"I'm not some starry-eyed kid this time around, and... what are you grinning at?"

"Got you over here, didn't it?"

"Well, I'm not staying. I'm just here to tell you it doesn't work."

"I missed you. The more I'm around you, the more I realize how much." Her heart fluttered and was ruthlessly ignored. "That doesn't cut it with me either."

"What does?"

"You might try straight-up honesty for a change. Saying what you mean without

any of the goofy touches. Which

155

are clichés, by the way," she added as he stubbed out the cigarette and got to his feet.

And clichés became clichés, she thought, because they goddamn worked.

"All right." He stopped in front of her, hooked his fingers in the neck of her

sweatshirt and tugged her forward. "Can't get my mind off you, Dana. I can tuck

you away in it for stretches of time, but you're still in there. Like a splinter."

"So yank me out." She thrust up her chin. "Go ahead."

"I like you there, which makes me a glutton for punishment. I like you here, curling your lip at me and smelling of rain."
He reached up, tugged the band out of her hair and tossed it aside. Then he wrapped his fingers where the band had been. "I want to take you to bed, right now. I want to sink my teeth into you. I want to bury myself inside you. And when we're done, I want to do it all over again."
He angled his head, kept his eyes on hers. "How's that for straight-up honesty?"
"Not half bad."

Chapter Ten

HE stared at her, trying to gauge her mood. "If that wasn't a yes" he decided, "you'd better run for the door. Fast."
"It-"
The rest of the words spilled down her throat when he swung her off her feet. "Too late. I win by default."
She did her best to frown, but it wasn't easy with the giddy thrill pumping through her. "Maybe I only want you because you're one of the few guys who can cart me around like I'm in the featherweight division."
"It's a start. I like your build, Stretch. Lots of territory to explore. What are you carrying now?" He juggled her a bit. "About one-fifty?"
A dangerous glint sharpened her eyes. "You think a comment like that's going to make me go gooey?"
"And every ounce exquisitely packed."
"Nice save."
"Thanks. I like your face, too."

"If you're about to say something about it being full of character, I'm going to hurt you."

"Those deep, dark eyes." He laid her on the bed as he looked into them.

"I never could get the image of those eyes out of my head. Then there's that mouth. All soft and ripe and tasty." He nipped into her bottom lip, tugged gently. "I could spend hours thinking about your mouth."

She wasn't going gooey, exactly, but she had to admit something inside was

definitely warming up. "You're better at this than you used to be."

"Shut up. I'm working here." He cruised his lips over her cheeks. "Then there's the

dimples. Unexpected, capricious, strangely sexy. I've always loved the look of

you."

He took her mouth again, long, slow, and deep until the pleasure spread from that

point of contact through her body and straight down to her toes.

Oh, yes, she thought, he was much, much better at it now.

"Remember that first time with us?"

She arched a little, shifted a little as he nuzzled at her neck. "Since we all but set

the living room rug on fire, it's a little tough to forget it."

"All that pent-up passion and energy. It's a wonder we survived it."

"We were young and resilient."

He eased back, smiled at her. "Now we're older and smarter. I'm going to drive you

crazy, and it's going to take a very long time."

The muscles in her belly quivered. She needed to be touched. She needed to be

shared, and with him-always with him-she could have both.

She'd known they would end up here when she'd walked out of her apartment.

Maybe she'd known, down deep, they'd end up here the minute she'd opened

Flynn's door and seen Jordan standing outside.

158

She wanted, he wanted. She could only hope that could be enough for her.

"It happens I have some time on my hands just now."

"Let's start... right here."

His lips took hers with a kind of restrained urgency that shot shock waves of hot

need through her system. Even as her heart leaped, he changed the tone, gentled it

until that raging beat went slow and thick.

She floated back on the memory of what had been between them. The fire and the

sinew of it. And forward again, to what was now. A kind of wonder and depth.

Helpless to resist either, hungry for the familiar and the new, she wrapped herself

around him.

His body was familiar. The years hadn't really changed it. Long, broad at the

shoulder, lean at the hips. The play of muscles under her hands, so much the same.

The good solid weight of him, the shape of his mouth, his hands, so much the same.

How she'd missed this knowing of another. And the rush of love that streamed

through the pleasure of being known by him.

Yet even as she slid into the old rhythm, he eased back and just looked at her.

"What? What is it?"

"I just want to look at you." He unbuttoned her shirt, taking his time about it, skimming the backs of his fingers over the exposed skin. And never taking his eyes off hers. "I want you to look at me. Who we were, who we are. Not so far apart, really." Still watching her face, he trailed his fingers over the thin cotton of her bra. "But just far enough to be interesting, don't you think?" "You want me to think?" She shivered as those lazy fingers brushed her nipples. "You're always thinking." He drew her up, slipped the shirt away. "Such a busy mind. Just one more thing about you that appeals to me."

159

As his hands stroked her back, she linked her arms around his neck.

"You're awfully chatty, Hawke."

"Just gives you one more thing to think about, doesn't it?"

He opened the clasp of her bra, then walked his fingers over her shoulders to

nudge the straps down.

His lips touched hers, retreated, touched and retreated until her arms locked

around him and with a catch of breath her mouth fused to his.

He'd wanted that-that quick flash of need. For him. Because no, he didn't want her

to think, but only to feel what they could bring to each other. Here and now.

His fingers tangled in her hair, then his hands fisted there, drawing her head back

so that he could plunder her mouth, her throat. So that he could, for a moment,

release the restless animal that prowled inside him.

He could have devoured her in one reckless bite. But that was too fast, that was too easy. Instead he let the heat rage and tormented them both. He feasted on her, then sampled. His hands rushed over her, then slowed and lingered. When she trembled, so did he. Her body had always been the purest of pleasures to him. Not just the shape and texture, but its eagerness to enjoy, its openness to the adventure of sex. The thunder of her heart under his lips aroused him as much as the ripe breasts. All that lovely smooth skin that shivered under the pass of his tongue, the scrape of his teeth, was only more of a thrill when the woman urged him to take more. Her hands rushed over him, tugging at his shut. And the throaty purr of approval as her nails scraped his flesh had his blood burning so he had to fight a vicious war not to hurry. But he wasn't going to gulp when he could sip. Where had this patience come from? He would drive her mad with it. How could his mouth be so fevered and his hands so exquisitely controlled? His muscles quivered under her hands, and she knew him, oh, she knew him well

160

enough to exploit his wants and weaknesses. Yet even as he met her demands, even as he pushed her to the trembling edge, he held back and left her quaking.

"For God's sake, Jordan."

"You're not crazy enough yet." His breath tore out of his lungs, but he pinned her

arms down and continued to fuel the flames with his mouth. "Neither am I."

There was so much of her, and he needed it all. The sumptuous body, the questing mind, and that part of her heart he'd lost through carelessness. He needed more than her desire and heat. He needed her trust again, and would settle for a glimmer of the affection they'd once shared. He wanted back what he'd given up in order to survive.

He released her hands to embrace her, to hold her tight, tight as they rolled over the bed.

Her skin was slick with sweat, and she was hot and wet and ready. He had only to cup her to fling her over the edge. She sobbed out his name as her body erupted.

And he knew when she went limp beneath him she'd given him something he hadn't known he'd craved.

Her surrender.

"Dana." He said her name over and over as his lips rushed over her face. When her eyes, so dark and heavy, opened and looked into his, he slid silkily inside her.

It was coming home and finding that what you'd left was only richer, truer,

stronger than what had been. Impossibly moved, he linked his fingers with hers, gripped tight, and gave himself.

Accepting, she arched to him, then lifting her lips, found his and joined them. The

sweetness of it brought an ache to her throat as pleasure built on top of pleasure.

They matched, beat for beat, then thrust for thrust when sweetness became desperation.

They were still joined, lips, hands, loins, when they fell.

* * *

161

IT could be, Dana thought as she lay sprawled over Jordan, that she had just

experienced the most intense, spectacular sex of her life.

Not that she intended to mention it. Despite the afterglow and the filmy haze of

love, she didn't have to feed his ego.

But if she were going to mention it, she would have to say her body had never felt

more deliciously used. She wouldn't object to having it used in just that way on a

regular basis.

Then again, sex had never been their problem. Wasn't their problem the fact she

didn't know what their problem had been? Or was. Or might be.

Hell with it.

"You're thinking again," Jordan murmured, and ran a finger slowly down her

spine. "You think so damn loud. I don't suppose you could put it off another few

minutes, just until I regenerate some brain cells."

"When they're dead they're dead, smart guy."

"That was a metaphor, a delicate euphemism."

"Nothing delicate about you, especially your euphemism."

"I'm going to take that as a compliment." He tugged on her hair until she lifted her

head. "You sure look good, Stretch, all rumped and had. Are you going to stay?"

She cocked her head. "Am I going to get rumped and had again?"

"That's the plan."

"Then I guess I can stick around for round two." She rolled aside, sat up and raked her fingers through her hair. And when he reached out, she cocked her brows knowingly.

Until he frowned and trailed his fingers gently over her breast. "Rubbed you a little raw here and there." He scraped his knuckles over his own chin. "If I'd known you were dropping by, I'd have shaved."

"I take it 'dropping by' is another euphemism." She
162

needed to keep it light or her heart was going to melt right into his hands.

"Besides, it was that unshaven, bohemian look that helped get me into bed with you."

She gave his cheek a friendly rub, then stretched. "God. I'm starving."

"Want to order a pizza?"

"I can't wait for pizza. I need immediate fueling. There's got to be something that

passes for food in the kitchen."

"Wouldn't count on it. Kitchen's pretty torn up. Construction zone."

"A real man would go down and hunt up provisions."

"I hate when you do that. I always did."

"I know." It absolutely warmed her cockles. "Does it still work?"

"Yeah. Shit." He got out of bed, dragged on his jeans. "You're going to take what

you get. No bitching."

"Deal." Satisfied, she lay back down on her side, snuggled into the pillow.

"Problem?" she asked when he only stood, staring at her.

"No. Brain cells regenerating."

Her dimples flashed. "Food."

"I'm on it."

She felt quite smug as he walked out of the room. Maybe it was just a little small of her to gloat, even mentally, that she still knew how to push his buttons. But it brought her such a nice glow, how wrong could it be? And it was better, wasn't it, then letting herself get all worried and churned up about what was going to happen next. This time around she would be smarter, enjoy the moment and restrain herself from expecting more. They enjoyed each other's company, even when they were poking at each other. They shared people who mattered, very much, to both of them. And they had a strong sexual connection. It was the basis of a good, healthy relationship.

163

So why the hell did she have to be in love with him? If not for that one little thing, it would be perfect. Still, when you approached it realistically, it really was her problem. Just as it had been her problem before. He wasn't obliged to love her back, and whatever she put into or took out of the situation was her own doing. He cared about her. She closed her eyes and bit back a sigh. Jesus, that was a sting. Was there anything more painful or lowering than being in love with someone who sincerely cared about you? Better not to think about it, to turn that part of herself off, as long as she could manage it. She didn't have any illusions this time around about them being together forever, building a home, making a family, forging a future.

His life was hi New York, and hers Was here. And God knew she had enough in her life to satisfy and occupy her without adding to it by spinning dreams that included Jordan Hawke.

He'd only hurt her before because she'd let herself be hurt. She wasn't just older,

she decided. She was smarter and stronger now.

While she was trying to convince herself, she stared at his laptop. His screen saver

had come on, and was nothing but a shifting spiral of color that was already making her dizzy.

How did he stand it?

As soon as she thought it, she had the answer. It would irritate him enough to push him back to work.

Considering, she sat up. He hadn't turned the machine off when she'd interrupted

him. He hadn't closed the document ... had he?

She bit her lip, glanced toward the doorway.

That meant whatever he'd been writing was still on the screen, and if she just

happened to give the mouse a little shake, it would pop right up. And if she just

happened to read what he'd written, what was the harm?

164

Keeping an ear out for footsteps, she slid out of bed, tiptoed over to the desk. She

tapped the mouse gently with a fingertip to flick the screen saver off.

With one last glance toward the doorway, she scrolled back two pages in the

document, then began to read.

She was caught up quickly, though she hit what was obviously the middle of a

descriptive paragraph. He had a way of pulling you into the scene,
surrounding
you with it.

And this one was dark and cold and quietly terrifying. Something lurked.
By the
first page she was in the hero's head, knowing his sense of urgency and
the
underlying fear. Something hunted, and was already feeding off pain.
When she came, to the end of what he'd written, she swore. "Well, damn
it, what
happens next?"

"That's a hell of a compliment from a naked woman," Jordan
commented.

She jumped. She cursed herself, but she all but jumped out of her skin,
which was

all she was wearing. And she flushed, which was considerably worse.

She felt the

heat spread over her as she whirled to see Jordan standing in the
doorway, jeans

carelessly unbuttoned, hair mussed, a bag of Fritos, a can of Coke, and
an apple in

his hands.

"I was just..." There wasn't any way out of it, she realized, and so she
simply told

the embarrassing truth. "I was curious. And rude."

"No big deal."

"No, really, I shouldn't have poked around in your work. But it was just
there,

which is your fault for not closing the file."

"Which would make it your fault for interrupting me, then distracting me
with

sex."

"I certainly didn't use sex just so I could ..." She broke off, heaved out a
breath. He

was grinning at her, and she could hardly blame him. "Hand over the Fritos."

Instead, he walked to the bed, sat back against the pillow.

165

"Come and get them." He reached into the bag, took out a handful, and began to munch.

"Anyway, it was the screen saver. It was making me cross-eyed."

Casually, she

thought, she sat back down on the bed and tugged the bag of chips out of his hand.

"I hate that bastard." He crunched into the apple, handed her the soda.

"So, you

want to know what happens next?"

"I was mildly interested." She popped the top of the Coke, took a long sip. She ate

some Fritos, traded them for the apple, traded them back. And, she thought in

disgust, he wasn't going to crack.

"Okay, who is he? What's after him? How did he get there?"

He took the Coke. Was there anything more satisfying than having someone who

shared your love of books being so interested in one of yours? he wondered.

If you added the fact that your literary partner was a very sexy, very naked woman,

it was just gravy.

"It's a long story. Let's just say he's a man who's made mistakes, and he's looking

for a way to fix them. Along the way he finds out there aren't any easy answers,

that redemption-the real thing-carries a price. That love, the kind that matters,

makes the price-worth paying."

"What did he do?"

"Betrayed a woman, killed a man." He ate more chips, listened to the rain drum and patter-outside the window, and in the forest in his mind. "He thought he had reasons for both. Maybe he did. But were they the right reasons?" "You're writing it, you ought to know." "No, he has to know. That's part of the price of redemption. The not-knowing haunts him, hunts him as much as what's with him in the woods." "What is with him in the woods?" He chuckled. "Read the book." She bit into the apple again. "That's a very underhanded method of making a sale."

166

"A guy's gotta make a living. Even if it is with 'mundane and predictable commercial fiction.' One of your pithy reviews of my work." She felt a twang of guilt, but shrugged it off. "I'm a librarian. Former librarian," she corrected. "And I'm about to become a bookstore owner. I value all books." "Some more than others." "That would be a matter of personal taste rather than a professional outlook." Now she wanted to squirm. "Certainly your commercial success indicates you write books that satisfy the masses." He shook his head and abruptly craved a cigarette. "Nobody damns with faint praise better than you, Dana." "I didn't mean it that way." She was, she realized, digging a hole for herself. But she could hardly confess to being a fan of his work when she was sitting in his bed naked and eating corn chips. It was a sure way to make both of them feel

ridiculous.

And would make any honest praise seem like pandering.

"You're doing what you always wanted to do, Jordan, and successfully.

You

should be proud of yourself."

"No argument there." He polished off the Coke, set the can aside.

Wrapped his

fingers around her ankle. "Still hungry?"

Relieved that the topic had been tabled, she rolled up the bag of chips, tossed it on

the floor beside the bed. "As a matter of fact," she began, then jumped him.

* * *

IT shouldn't bother him so much, and it irritated the hell out of him that it did. He

didn't expect everyone to like his work. He'd long ago stopped being bruised or

deflated by a poor review or a disgruntled comment from a reader.

He wasn't some high-strung, temperamental artist who fell into funks at the

slightest criticism.

167

But damn it, Dana's dismissal of his work dug holes in him.

It was worse now, Jordan thought as he gazed out the bedroom window and

brooded. Worse that she'd been kind about it. It had been easier to take her

scathing and unsolicited opinions of his talent, her snotty, elitist dismissal of his

field than her gentle and kindly meant pat on the head.

He wrote thrillers, often with a whiff of something other, and she dismissed them

as hackneyed commercialism that appealed to the lowest common denominator.

He could handle that, if she was an elitist book snob, but she was far from it. She simply loved books. Her apartment was crammed with them and there was plenty of genre fiction on her shelves. Though he'd noted there was nothing on them by Jordan Hawke. And, yeah, he thought, it stung more than a little. He'd been ridiculously pleased to come back into the bedroom and see her bent over his laptop, to see what he'd believed had been avid interest in the story he was building. Curiosity, as she'd said. Nothing more. Best to put that one away, he told himself. Lock it away in a box before it dug in too deep and started to fester. They were lovers again, and thank God for it. They were, he hoped, halfway to being friends again as well. He didn't want to lose her, lover and friend, because he couldn't get past her disinterest or disapproval of his work. She didn't know what it meant to him to be a writer. How could she? Oh, she knew it was what he'd wanted and hoped for. But she didn't know why it was so vital to him. He'd never shared that with her. There was a great deal that he hadn't shared with her; he admitted. His work, yes. He'd often asked her to read something he'd done, and naturally had been pleased and satisfied 168 when she'd praised it-intrigued and interested when she'd discussed the story and offered her opinions.

The fact was, on a purely practical level, hers was one of the opinions he valued most.

But he'd never told her how much he'd needed to make something of himself. As a man, as a writer. For himself, certainly. And for his mother. It was, for Jordan, the only way he knew to pay his mother back for all she'd done for him, all she'd given up for him, all she'd worked for.

But he'd never shared that with Dana, or anyone else. Never shared with anyone

that private grief, the drowning guilt or the desperate need.

So, he would put it away again and concentrate on rebuilding what he could and

starting fresh with what he couldn't rebuild.

His current hero wasn't the only one looking for redemption.

* * *

DANA waited until she'd painted an entire wall in what was to be Zoe's main

salon area. She'd bitten her tongue half a dozen times that morning, had talked

herself out of saying anything, then had taken the internal debate full circle again.

In the end she convinced herself that it was an insult to friendship not to speak.

"I slept with Jordan." She blurted it out, kept her eyes trained on the wall she was

painting, and waited for her friends to burst out with comments and questions.

When five long seconds ran by in silence, she turned her head and caught the look

passing between Malory and Zoe.

"You knew? You already knew? You mean to tell me that arrogant, self-satisfied

son of a bitch ran right to Flynn to brag that he'd banged me?"

"No." Malory barely swallowed a laugh. "At least not that I know of.

And I'm sure

if Jordan had said anything

169

about it to Flynn, Flynn would've told me. Anyway, we didn't know. We just..."

She trailed off, then studied the ceiling.

"We were wondering how long it would take before the two of you jumped each

other," Zoe put in. "Actually, we thought about starting a pool on it, but decided

that would be a little crass. I'd've won," she added. "I had today as spontaneous

combustion day. Malory figured you'd hold out another week."

"Well." Dana fisted her hands on her hips. "That's a hell of a note."

"We didn't actually bet." Malory chimed back in. "And see what good friends we

are, not even pointing out that you're telling us, though Jordan telling Flynn would

make him an arrogant, self-satisfied son of a bitch."

"I'm rendered speechless."

"Oh, no, you don't." Zoe shook her head. "At least not until you tell us how it was.

You want to use the scale of one to ten, or do a descriptive retrospective?"

The laugh escaped before Dana could stop it. "I don't know why I like the two of

you."

"Sure you do. Come on," Zoe urged. "Tell. You're dying to."

"It was great, and not just because I was ready to spontaneously combust. I missed

being with him. You think you forget what it's like to feel so ... connected to

somebody. But you don't. You really don't. We were always good in bed. We're even better now."

Zoe let out a long sigh. "Was it romantic or insane?"

"Which time?"

"Now you're bragging."

With a laugh Dana started painting again. "Been a while since I had anything to brag about."

"How are you planning to handle it?" Malory asked her.

"Handle what?"

"Are you going to tell him you're in love with him?"

170

The question brought a little shadow creeping in on the edge of her bright mood.

"What's the point of it? He'd either back off or feel guilty about not backing off."

"If you're honest with him-"

"That was your way," Dana interrupted. "It's the way you needed to deal with what

you felt for Flynn. It was right for you, Mal, and for him. But for me ... well, I don't

have any expectations of Jordan this time around, and I'm willing to take responsibility for my own emotions and the consequences. What I'm not willing to

do is put my big, gooshy heart in his hands and force him into making a choice.

What we've got right now is good enough for me. For now. We'll worry about

tomorrow when it gets here."

"Um... I'm not going to disagree with you," Zoe began. "Maybe you need to take

some time, let things settle or evolve. But more, maybe you're meant to.

Maybe it's

part of the quest."

The roller jumped in Dana's hand. "My sleeping with Jordan is part of the quest?

Where the hell does that come in?"

"I don't mean the sex, specifically. Though sex is, let's face it, powerful magic."

"Yeah, well, maybe the gods sang and the faeries wept." Dana ran her roller over

the wall again. "But I'm not buying that doing the wild thing with Jordan's going to lead me to the key."

"I'm talking about the relationship, the connection, however you want to say it.

What was between you, what is between you, what's going to be."

Zoe paused as Dana lowered the roller, turned with a speculative look on her face.

"Isn't that following along with what Rowena said to you about the key?" she

continued. "Couldn't it be part of the whole thing?"

Dana said nothing for a moment, then dredged her roller in paint. "Well, that's

another hell of a note. It's got some logic to it, Zoe, but I don't see how it helps.

Somehow I

171

don't think I'm going to find the key to the Box of Souls tangled in the sheets the

next time Jordan and I make love, but it's an interesting angle, which should also

be fun to explore."

"Maybe it's more something, or some place, that meant something to you, or both

of you, before. And now. And later." Zoe threw up her hands. "I'm not making sense."

"Yeah, you are," Dana corrected as a line formed between her brows. "I can't think of anything right offhand, but I'm going to think harder. Maybe talk to Jordan about it. No way to deny he's an integral part of this, so he might as well be useful."

"I'm just going to say one thing." Malory squared her shoulders. "Love's not a burden, not to anyone. And if he feels (Otherwise, he's not worthy of you."

After a moment's surprise, Dana set down her roller. She walked over, bent down

and kissed Malory's cheek. "You're a sweetheart."

"I love you. I love both of you. And anyone who doesn't love you back is a moron."

"Jeez, for that you get a hug, too." Dana gave Malory a squeeze.

"Whatever the

hell happens, I'm glad I've got the two of you."

"This is so nice." Zoe stepped over to swing an arm around each of them. "I'm

really glad Dana had sex so we could have this moment."

On a bray of laughter, Dana gave them both a little nudge. "I'll see what I can do

tonight, and maybe we can have a real weep fest after settlement tomorrow."

Chapter Eleven

JORDAN slept with his arm flung over Dana's waist, his leg hooked-over hers, as

if he would hold her in place. Though she hadn't been the one to leave, this time

around he was far from sure she would let him stay.

In her bed, or in her life.

But he held on to her as he wandered in dreams. Through the moonstruck night in

the high summer heat where everything smelled ripe and green and secret.

The woods were locked in shadows, with the flicker of lightning bugs quick brinks

of gold against the black. In dreams he knew, somehow knew, he was a man

instead of the boy he'd been when he'd walked through the wild grass at the verge

of those woods. His heart pounding with... fear? Anticipation?

Knowledge? As

he'd stared up at the great black house that rose regally toward the swimming

moon.

His friends weren't close by, as they had been on that hot summer night of his

memory. Flynn and Brad weren't there, with their contraband beer and cigarettes,

the camping gear,

173

or the youthful courage and carelessness three teenage boys made together.

He was alone, the warriors of the Peak guarding the gate behind him and the

house empty of life and silent as a tomb.

No, not empty, he thought. It was a mistake to think of houses, old houses, as

being empty. They were filled with memories, with the faded echoes of voices.

Drops of tears, drops of blood, the ring of laughter, the edge of tempers that had

ebbed and flowed between the walls, into the walls, over the years.

Wasn't it, after all, a kind of life?

And there were houses, he knew it, that breathed. They carried in their wood and

stone, their brick and mortar a kind of ego that was nearly, very nearly, human.

But there was something, something he needed to remember about this house, about this place. This night. Something he knew but couldn't quite bring clear in his mind. It drifted in and out, like a half-remembered song, teasing and nagging at him.

It was important, even vital, that he turned whatever was in his mind, like a

camera lens, until the image came into sharp focus.

In the dream he closed his eyes, breathed slow and deep as he tried to empty his mind so what needed to come would come.

When he opened them, he saw her. She walked along the parapet under the white

ball of moon. Alone as he was alone. Dreaming, perhaps, as he was dreaming.

Her cloak billowed up, though there was no wind to lift it. It seemed to him the air

held its breath, and all the sounds of the night-the rustles and peeps and hoots-fell

like a crash into terrible silence.

In his chest his heart began to pound. On the parapet, the woman began to turn. In

a moment, he thought, in just a moment; they would see each other.

Finally...

174

The sun was a violent flash that shocked his brain, blinded him. He staggered a bit

from the displacement of being shot from inky night to brilliant day.

Birds sang with a kind of desperate joy in music that sounded of flutes and harps

and pipes. And he heard the rushing sound that water makes when it falls from a great height, then thunders into itself.

He struggled to orient himself. There were woods here, but not any he recognized.

Leaves were verdant, shimmering green or soft and glowing blue, and limbs were

heavy with fruit the color of rubies and topaz. The air had a ripe, plummy scent, as if it too could be plucked and tasted.

He walked through the trees, on ground springy and richly brown, past a waterfall

of wild blue where golden fish danced in the rippling pool at its base.

Curious, he dipped his hand into it. He felt the wet, the fresh coolness.

And as he

let it pour from his cupped hand, he saw that the water falling from his palm

wasn't clear, but that same deep blue.

It was, he thought, almost more than the senses could bear. The sheer beauty was

too intense, too vivid for the mind to translate. And once seen, once experienced,

how did anyone survive without it, in the pale, dim reality?

Fascination had him reaching toward the water again when he caught sight of the

deer drinking on the opposite side of the pool.

The buck was enormous, its coat sleek and golden, its rack a shining silver. When

it lifted its great head, it stared at Jordan with eyes as green and deep as the forest

around them.

Around its neck it wore a jeweled collar with the stones catching the streams of

sunlight and tossing them back in colored prisms.

He thought it spoke, though there was no movement, and no sound other than the words that formed in his head.

175

Will you stand for them?

"Who?"

Go, and see.

The deer turned, and walked, silver hooves silent on the ground, into the woods.

This is no dream, Jordan thought. He straightened, started to circle the pond and

follow the deer.

But no, it hadn't said come and see, but go. Trusting instinct, Jordan took the

opposite path.

He stepped out of the trees to a sea of flowers so saturated with color they shocked

the senses. Scarlet, sapphire, amethyst, amber glinted in that streaming sun as if

every petal were an individual facet cut perfectly from each gem. And in the center

of that sea, like the most precious of blooms, were the Daughters of Glass, trapped

in their crystal coffins.

"No, I'm not dreaming." He spoke aloud, to prove that he could, to hear the sound

of his voice. To center himself before he walked across the sea of flowers to stare

down at the faces he already knew.

They seemed to be sleeping. Their beauty was undiminished, but it was cold. He

saw that, the cold beauty, that could never change but was forever trapped in one

instant of time.

He felt pity and outrage, and as he stared into the face so like Dana's, a tearing

grief he hadn't experienced since his mother's death.

"This is hell," he said aloud. "To be trapped between life and death, to be unable to

take either."

"Yes. You have it precisely." Kane stood on the other side of the glass coffin.

Elegant in black robes with a jeweled crown atop his dark mane of hair, he smiled

at Jordan. "You have a keenness of mind sadly lacking in much of your kind. Hell,

as you call it, is merely the absence of all without an end."

"Hell should be earned."

176

"Ah. Philosophy." His voice held a touch of amusement, and a canny calculation.

"Occasionally, you will agree, hell is merely inherited. Their sire and his mortal

bitch damned them." He swept a hand toward the coffins. "I was merely an

instrument, so to speak, who ..." He lifted the hand, twisted his wrist.

"Turned the key."

"For glory?" • • "

"For that. For power. For all of this." He spread his arms wide, as if to encompass

his world: "All of this, which can never, will never, be theirs. Soft hearts and

mortal frailties have no place in the realm of gods."

"Yet gods love, hate, covet, scheme, war, laugh, weep. Mortal frailties?"

Kane cocked his head. "You interest me. You would debate, knowing who and

what I am? Knowing I brought you here, behind the Curtain of Power, where you

are no more than an ant to be flicked off a crumb? I could kill you with a thought."

"Could you?" Deliberately, Jordan walked around the crystal coffin. He wouldn't

have even the reflection of Dana between them. "Why haven't you?

Maybe it's

because you prefer bullying and abusing women. It's a different matter, isn't it,

when you face a man?"

The blow knocked him back ten feet. He tasted blood in his mouth, and spat it out

onto the crushed flowers before he got to his feet. There was more than power on

Kane's face, he noted. There was fury. And where there was anger, there was

weakness.

"Smoke and mirrors. But you haven't got the guts to fight like a man.

With fists.

One round, you son of a bitch. One round, my way."

"Your way? You have no terms here. And you will know pain."

It gripped his chest, icy claws with razor tips. The unspeakable agony dropped

him to his knees and ripped a cry from his throat that he couldn't suppress.

177

"Beg." Pleasure purred into Kane's voice. "Beg for mercy. Crawl for it."

With what strength he had left, Jordan lifted his head, stared straight into Kane's

eyes. "Kiss my-"

His vision dimmed. He heard shouting over the roaring in his ears, felt a flood of

warmth over the hideous cold.

And the fury of Kane's voice seemed to scream through his mind: "I am not

finished!"

Jordan fell into unconsciousness.

* * *

"JORDAN! Oh, God, oh, God, Jordan, come back."

He thought perhaps he was on a boat, one that rocked fitfully in the sea.

He might

have drowned, he supposed. His chest was on fire, his head dull and throbbing.

But someone was bringing him back, pressing warm lips to his.

Dragging him

back to life whether he liked it or not.

But why the hell was a dog barking like a maniac out in the open sea?

He blinked his eyes open and stared up at Dana.

Though pale as glass, she was a welcome sight. She was running a trembling hand

over his face, pushing it through his hair as she clamped her arms around him and

rocked.

Outside the closed bedroom door, Moe barked and threw himself against the

wood.

"What the hell?" he managed and stared dully when she began to laugh.

"You're back. Okay, you're back." Hysteria was trying to bubble and brew in her

chest. "Your mouth's bleeding. Your mouth's bleeding, and your chest, and

you're-you're so cold."

"Give me a minute." He didn't try to move, not yet, as he'd already discovered that

just turning his head brought on a hideous wave of pain and nausea.

But what he could see was a blessed relief. He was in

178

Dana's bedroom, sprawled on the bed, mostly over her lap, while she clutched him

to her breast as she might a nursing baby.

If he didn't feel as though he'd been run over by a truck, it wouldn't have been half bad.

"I was dreaming."

"No." She pressed her cheek to his. "No, you weren't."

"At first... or maybe not. Stretch, you got any whiskey around here? I need a shot."

"I've got a bottle of Paddy's."

"I'll give you a thousand dollars for three fingers of Paddy's."

"Sold." Her laugh was too close to a sob for comfort. "Here, just lie down. I'll get

it. You need to cover up, you're shaking."

She hauled the covers over him, tucked him up like a bug in a cocoon.

"Oh, Jesus

God." She shook herself as she dropped her forehead to his.

"Two thousand if you get it here within the next forty-five seconds."

She fled the room, and Jordan figured he couldn't be in such bad shape if he could

still appreciate the beauty of a naked Dana on the run.

An instant later Moe leaped on the bed and tripled every ache in his body. He

started to curse, then settled for a sigh as the dog growled low, sniffed all around

the bedcovers, then slurped Jordan's face.

"Yeah, that'll teach us to boot you out of the bedroom just because we want to

have sex in private."

Moe whined, bumped Jordan's shoulder with his nose, then turned three ungainly

circles and settled down at his side.

Dana sprinted back, a bottle in one hand, a glass in the other. After pouring

considerably more than three fingers of whiskey, she hooked an arm behind his

head and lifted the glass to his lips.

"Thanks. I can handle it from here."

"Okay." Still, she eased him gently back against the pillows before lifting the

bottle again and taking a long pull straight from it herself.

She imagined the heat of it hit Jordan's belly just as shockingly as it did hers.

Steadier, she went to the closet and pulled out a robe.

"Do you have to put that on? I like looking at you."

She didn't want to tell him her skin felt as if it had been rubbed with ice.

"We

shouldn't have locked the dog out of the room."

"Yeah, Moe and I were just discussing that." He laid his hand on Moe's wide back.

"Is he what woke you?"

"Him, and your screaming." She shuddered once, then sat on the side of the bed.

"Jordan, your chest."

"What?" He looked down at himself as she eased the covers aside. There were five

distinct grooves, like a talon pattern, over his heart. They were shallow, he noted,

and thanked God for it. But they bled sluggishly and were viciously painful.

"I'm messing up your sheets."

"They'll wash." She had to swallow, hard. "I'd" better take care of those cuts. While

I'm at it, you can tell me what the hell he did to you."

She went into the bathroom for antiseptic and bandages, then just braced her

hands on the sink and ordered herself to breathe until she could manage it without

feeling like she was sucking razor blades into her throat.

She knew what fear was now. She'd felt it when the storm had ripped over the

island and the black sea had rushed to take her. But even that, she realized, even that bone-deep terror, had been a shadow of what she'd gone through when the shocked agony of Jordan's scream had torn her out of sleep. She fought back her tears. They were a useless indulgence when action was needed. Instead, she gathered what she needed and went back in to tend his wounds.

180

"I brought you some aspirin. I don't have anything stronger."

"That'll work. Thanks." He downed three with the water she offered.

"Look, I can

handle this. I remember you don't do well with blood."

"I won't be a baby if you won't." Ignoring the queasiness, she sat down to mop him

up. "Talk to me, and I'm less likely to pitch over in a faint. What happened,

Jordan? Where did he take you?"

"I started out somewhere else. I can't quite pull it back, so maybe I was dreaming. I

was walking. It was dark, but with a full moon. I think it might've been up at the

Peak. I can't remember for sure. It's hazy."

"Keep going." She concentrated on his voice, on the words. On anything but the

way the cloth she was using reddened as she pressed it against the cuts. •

"Next thing I knew, it was broad daylight. It was ... sort of the way I always

imagined the transporter in Star Trek works. Instant and disorienting."

"It wouldn't be my favorite mode of transportation."

"Are you kidding? It's got to beat the hell out of... Christ on a crutch!"

"I know. I'm sorry." But she gritted her teeth and continued to swab the disinfectant over the cuts. "Keep talking. We'll get through this."

Alarmed, Moe deserted the field by slinking off the bed and crawling under it.

Jordan did his best to breathe through the pain. "The Curtain of Power. I was

behind it," he said and told her.

"You provoked him? Deliberately?" She sat back, all the interest and concern on

her face shifting into irritated impatience. "Do you have to be such a man?"

"Yes. Yes, I do. Added to that, he was going to do whatever he was going to do.

Why shouldn't I get a couple of swings in first, even if they were only verbal?"

"Oh, I don't know. Let me think." Sarcasm dripping

181

from each word, she tapped a finger to the side of her head. "Maybe because ...

he's a god."

"And you'd've stood there, of course, hands folded, having a polite conversation?"

"I don't know." She blew out a breath and finished the bandaging.

"Probably not."

Deciding that she'd done her best, she bent over and dropped her head between her

knees. "I don't ever want to have to do that again."

"That makes two of us." Stiff, still achy, he turned so he could run his hand up and

down her back. "I appreciate it."

She managed what passed for a nod. "Tell me the rest."

"You just cleaned and bandaged the rest. Whatever he did felt just the way this

looks. Actually, it felt considerably worse."

"You screamed."

"Do you have to keep saying that? It's embarrassing."

"If it makes you feel any better, I screamed, too. I woke up and you were-it looked like you were having a convulsion. You were dead white, bleeding, shaking. I didn't know what the hell to do. I guess I panicked. I grabbed you, started shouting. You went limp. Almost as soon as I touched you, you went limp. I thought-for a minute I thought you were dead."

"I heard you."

She stayed where she was another moment, fighting back tears again.

"When?"

"After I hit the dirt the second time. I heard you calling for me, and it was like getting sucked back into the old transporter. I heard him, too, right as I was fading out. I heard him, but more inside my head: 'I'm not finished,' he said. 'I am not finished.' And he was royally pissed. He couldn't keep me there. He wasn't done with me, but he couldn't keep me there."

"Why?"

"You woke up." Reaching out, Jordan ran his fingers

182

over her cheek. "You called me. You touched me, and that brought me out."

"Human contact?"

"Maybe as simple as that," he agreed. "Maybe just that simple-when the humans are connected."

"But why you?" She picked up the cloth and dabbed at the cut on his lip.

"Why did

he take you behind the Curtain?"

"That's something we have to figure out. When we do-ouch, Dana."

"Sorry."

"When we do," he repeated as he nudged her hand away, "we'll have more of the pieces for this particular puzzle."

* * *

SIMPLE or complex, Dana needed answers. With Moe hanging his head blissfully out the passenger window, she drove to Warrior's Peak to get them.

Research and speculation were one thing, but her lover's blood had been shed. Now she wanted cold, hard facts.

The trees were still bright, and their color splashed across a dull gray sky layered with sulky clouds. But more leaves littered the road and the floor of the forest.

Already past their peak, she thought. Time was moving forward, and her four weeks were down to two.

What did she think? What did she know? She ran through everything that came to mind as she drove the last miles and then through the gates.

Rowena was in the front garden, gathering some of the last of the fall blooms. She

wore a thick sweater of deep blue speckled with dull gold, and to Dana's surprise, well-worn jeans and scuffed boots.

Her hair was tied back and rained in a sleek tail between her shoulder blades.

The country goddess in her garden, Dana thought, and imagined Malory would see it as a painting.

183

Rowena lifted a hand in a wave, then a smile lit up her face as she spotted Moe.

"Welcome." She ran to the car as Dana parked, opened the door for the exuberant Moe. "There's my handsome boy!" Her laugh rang out as Moe leaped up to kiss her face. "I was hoping you'd pay me a visit."

"Me or Moe?"

"Both are a delightful surprise. Why, what's this?" She put her hand behind her back, then brought it out again. She held out a huge Milk Bone that caused Moe to moan with pleasure. "Yes, it certainly is for you. Now if you'll sit and shake hands like a gentleman ..."

The words were barely out of her mouth when Moe plopped his butt on the ground, lifted his paw. They exchanged a shake, a long look of mutual admiration. He nipped the treat delicately out of her fingers, then sprawled at her feet to chomp it to bits.

"Is it a Dr. Doolittle thing?" Dana wondered, and got a puzzled glance from Rowena.

"I'm sorry?"

"You know. Talking to the animals."

"Ah. Let's say ... in a manner of speaking. And what can I offer you?" she asked Dana.

"Answers."

"So sober, so serious. And so attractive this morning. What a wonderful outfit. You have such a smart collection of jackets," Rowena commented as she ran a finger down the sleeve of the dull-gold tapestry fabric. "I covet them."

"I imagine you can whip one up just as easy as you did that dog biscuit."

"Ah, but that would take the fun, and the adventure, out of shopping, wouldn't it?

Would you like to come in? We'll have some tea by the fire."

"No, thanks. I don't have a lot of time. We're settling on our property early this

afternoon, so I'm going to have to

184

start back pretty directly. Rowena, there are some things I need to know."

"I'll tell you what I can. Why don't we walk? Rain's coming," she added, casting a

look at the sky. "But not for a bit. I like the heavy, anticipatory feel to the air

before a rain."

Since Moe had made short work of the Milk Bone, Rowena opened her hand and

revealed a bright red rubber ball. She threw it over the lawn toward the woods.

"I should warn you, Moe will expect you to keep throwing that for him for the next

three or four years."

"There's nothing quite so perfect as a dog." Rowena tucked her arm companionably in Dana's and began to walk. "A comfort, a friend, a warrior, an

amusement. They only ask that we love them."

"Why don't you have one?"

"Ah, well." With a sad smile, Rowena patted Dana's hand, then bent down to pick

up the ball Moe dropped at her feet. She ruffled his fur, then flung the ball for him

to chase.

"You can't." The realization struck, had Dana tapping her fingers to her temple.

"Duh. I don't mean you couldn't, but realistically ... A dog's life span is woefully

shorter than that of your average mortal."

"She remembered what Jordan had said about them being alone, about their

immortality on this plane being curse rather than gift.

"When you factor in the spectacular longevity of someone like you, and the finite

life span of your average mutt, that's a problem."

"Yes. I had dogs. At home, they were one of my great pleasures."

She picked up the ball, already covered with teeth marks and dog spit, in her

elegant hand and threw it for the tireless Moe.

"When we were turned out, I needed to believe that we would do what needed to

be done and return. Soon. I pined for many things of home, and comforted myself

with a

185

dog. A wolfhound was my first. Oh, he was so handsome and brave and loyal. Ten

years."

She sighed, and skirted along the edge of the woods. "He was mine for ten years.

The snap of a finger. There are things we can't change, that are denied to us while

we live here. I can't extend a creature's life beyond its thread. Not even that of a

beloved dog."

She scooped the ball up for Moe, threw it in another direction.

"I had a dog when I was a kid." Like Rowena, Dana watched Moe streak after the

ball as if it were the first time. "Well, it was my dad's dog, really. He got her the

year before I was born, so I grew up with her. She died when I was eleven. I cried

for three days."

"So you know what it is." Rowena smiled a little as Moe pranced back, doing a full-body wag with the rubber ball wedged in his mouth like an apple. "I grieved, and I swore I wouldn't indulge myself again. But I did. Many times. Until I had to accept that my heart would simply break if I had to go through the death of another I loved so much, after so short a time. So, I'm so pleased ..."

She bent down to catch Moe's face in her hands. "And so grateful that you brought the handsome Moe to visit me."

"It's not all it's cracked up to be, is it? Power, immortality?"

"Nothing is without pain or loss or price. Is this what you wanted to know?"

"Part of it. There are limitations, at least when you're here. And Kane has limitations when he's here. Limitations when he deals with something from our world. Is that right?"

"That's a fine deduction. You are creatures of free will. That's as it must be. He can lure, he can lie, he can deceive. But he cannot force."

"Can he kill?"

Rowena threw the ball again, farther this time to give Moe a longer chase. "You're not speaking of war or of

186

defense, of protection of innocents or loved ones. The penalty for taking the life of a mortal is so fierce I can't believe that even he would risk it."

"The end of existence," Dana supplied. "I've done my research. Not death, not the passing through to the next life, but an end."

"Even gods have fears. That is one. More is the stripping of power, the prison

between worlds that allows entry to none. This he would risk."

"He tried to kill Jordan."

Rowena whirled, gripped Dana's arm. "Tell me. Exactly."

She related everything that had happened in the middle of the night.

"He took him behind the Curtain?" Rowena asked. "And there shed his blood?"

"I'll say."

She began to pace, her movements so fretful that Moe sat quietly holding the

tooth-pocked ball in his mouth.

"Even now we're not permitted to see, to know. They were alone, you say? There

was no one else about?"

"Jordan said something about a deer."

"A deer." Rowena went very still. "What sort of deer? What did it look like?"

"It looked like a deer." Dana lifted her hands. "Except I guess it was the sort you'd

expect to find in places where the flowers look like rubies and so on. He said it

was gold and had a silver rack."

"It was a buck, then."

"Yes. And, oh, yeah, it had a collar, a jeweled collar."

"It's possible," she whispered. "But what does it mean?"

"You tell me."

"If it was him, why did he allow it?" Agitated, she began to stride up and down the

verge, between wood and lawn. "Why did he permit it?"

187

"Who and what?" Dana demanded and dragged Rowena's attention back to her by

shaking her arm.

"If it was the king," she said. "If it was our king taking the shape of the buck. If this is true, why did he allow Kane to bring a mortal behind the Curtain without consent? And to harm, to spill his blood there? What war is being waged hi my world?"

"I'm sorry, I don't know. But the only one wounded, as far as I can tell, was Jordan."

"I will talk to Pitte," she declared. "I will think. He saw no one else-only these two?"

"Just the buck and Kane."

"I don't have the answers you want. Kane has interfered before, but it's never gone this far. The spell was of his making, and the boundaries of it, his own. But he breaks them and is not stopped. I can do more, will do more. But I'm no longer certain of the scope of his power or protection. I can no longer be certain that the king rules."

"If he doesn't?"

"Then there is war," Rowena said flatly. "And still we are not brought home. This tells me, whatever is or has happened in my world, it remains my fate to finish

what I was sent here to do. I have to believe it's your fate to help me." She took a deep breath, calming herself. "I'll give you a balm for your man's wounds."

"We're sleeping together. I don't know if that makes him my man." With, an absentminded gesture, Rowena brushed this aside. "I must speak with

Pitte. Strategy is more his area than mine. Come, I'll get you the potion."

"Just a minute. One thing. Jordan. He's essential to my key?"

"Why do you ask what you already know?"

"I want confirmation."

In answer Rowena laid her fingertips on Dana's heart. "You already have that as well."

188

"Is he part of this because I love him?"

"He's part of you because you love him. And you are the key." She took Dana's

hand. "Come. I'll give you the balm for your warrior, then send you on your way."

She cast another look at the darkening sky. "The rain's coming."

Chapter Twelve

BRAD dumped ice in a galvanized bucket, creating a cold if humble nest for a

bottle of Cristal. He covered the exposed neck with a clean paint rag.

Behind him, Flynn and Jordan set up a card table. "The cloth for that's in me bag

over there."

Flynn glanced over. "Cloth?"

"Tablecloth."

"Why do they need a tablecloth? Table's clean."

"Just put it on the damn table."

Jordan walked over to the bag and ripped it open. "And look, he got one with

pretty pink rosebuds on it."

"Matching napkins," Flynn added, pulling them out of the bag.

"What a sweetie. I didn't know you had a feminine side."

"When we're done here, I'm going to kick your asses just to reestablish my

manhood-and because I'll enjoy it." Brad took out the champagne flutes he'd

brought along,

held them up to check for smudges. "Then maybe I'll tell the women this was my

idea and negate your points."

"Hey, I sprang for the flowers," Flynn reminded him.

"I bought the cookies." Jordan shook the bakery box.

"Ideas get more points than cookies and flowers, my friends." Brad twitched the

tablecloth to straighten it. "It's all about ideas and presentation. Which proves

being in touch with your feminine side bags more women."

"Then how come Flynn and I are the only ones here getting laid?"

"Give me time."

"I really should clock you for saying that as regards my woman and my sister."

Flynn studied Jordan's grin. "But it's not only an accurate statement, it rubs it in

Brad's face, so I'm letting it pass. How much time we got?"

"A while yet," Jordan said. "Settlement should be pretty straightforward, but

you've got lawyers, bankers, and papers, so it'll take twice as long as you think it will."

He stepped back, looked at the table set up in the foyer. He had to admit it was a

nice touch there among the drop cloths and paint supplies. A splash of color and

celebration against the primer-coated walls.

The women, he knew, would melt like ice cream in July.

"Okay, damn good idea, Brad."

"I've got a million of them."

"I don't see why we have to clear out before they get here," Flynn complained. "I'd

like champagne and cookies, not to mention the big sloppy kisses this is going to

generate."

"Because it's their moment, that's why." Satisfied, Brad leaned against the stepladder. "Recognizing that will only generate more big sloppy kisses in the long run."

"I like instant gratification." But Flynn paused, looked around. "It's going to be a hell of a place, really. Innovative idea, good location, attractive setting. It's good for the Valley. Good for them. You should see some of the stuff

191

Mal's setting up for stock. Over the weekend we went to see a couple of the artists she's going to feature. Cool stuff."

"He went with her to see art," Jordan pointed out, and with a grin tucked a finger in his mouth, then pulled up the side to mime a hook. "Can opera be far behind?"

"We'll see who's smirking when you're sitting in Dana's bookstore drinking herbal tea."

"That's not so bad. Brad here's probably going to have to get a facial to win Zoe over."

"There are lines that can't be crossed, no matter what the prize." But Brad looked up the stairs. "They're going to need to decide on lighting. And some of the trim

needs to be replaced. Could use a new sink hi the John up there."

"You're planning on seducing Zoe with bathroom fixtures?" Flynn asked. "You

devious bastard. I'm proud to call you friend."

"Seducing her could be a very satisfying side benefit- after all, the stepladder got

me a chicken dinner."

"Chicken dinner? You can get a chicken dinner at the Main Street Diner, Tuesday-night special." Sorrowfully, Flynn shook his head. "My pride in you is waning."

"I'm just getting started. But the fact is, they could use a little help here. There's

some tile work, some carpentry, a little plumbing and electrical. They've got to upgrade some of the windows. We could pitch in with more than champagne and cookies."

"I'm in for that," Jordan agreed.

"Sure. Already figured on it." Flynn shrugged. "Hell, it looks like my house is

going to be Remodel Central for a while anyway. Might as well spread the wealth.

And driving a few nails should help keep us all from going crazy over the keys."

"Now that you mention it." Jordan glanced toward the windows as rain began to

splat. "I'd better fill you in on what happened last night."

192

"Something happened to Dana?" Flynn pushed away from the wall. "Is she okay?"

"Nothing happened to her. She's fine. Hell, I need a smoke. Let's go out on the porch."

They stood outside, the rain drumming on the overhang. He took them through

it-the colors, the sounds, the movements, building the story much as he'd done for

them in tents pitched in a backyard, or around a campfire in the woods.

But this tune it hadn't come out of his imagination. However active and agile that

imagination was, it couldn't rake slashes down his chest. They burned still. It was

some consolation to hear Flynn's sharply drawn breath and see Brad's wince of

sympathy when he tugged up his shut to show them.

"Christ, those look nasty." Flynn studied the raw, red grooves.

"Shouldn't they be bandaged or something?"

"Dana put something on them last night, but she's not exactly Nurse Betty. I

smeared some more crap on them this morning. Point is, our guy was seriously

pissed- enough to take a genuine shot at me. Where does that leave the women?"

Heat flashed into Flynn's eyes. "He didn't touch Malory. Never physically touched

her. It was bad enough, scary enough, the way he messed with her mind. But this

... We've got to take him down."

"I'm open to ideas." Jordan spread his hands. "Problem is, as far as magic goes, I

can't even pull a rabbit out of my hat."

"Some of it's just misdirection, tricking the eye," Brad mused.

"Let me tell you, son, when that guy's got his claws in you, it's no trick of the eye."

"No, I mean from our stand," Brad told Jordan. "We direct him toward us, it gives

the women more space. He had a reason for going after you. If we can figure that

out,

193

exploit it, it might take his attention away from Dana for the next couple of weeks.

And from Zoe when her time comes around."

"I haven't got anything concrete. It just feels like I know something, but I can't reel it in." Frustrated, Jordan jammed his hands into his pockets. "Something I know, or did, or have, that's the answer. Or one of them. Something from before, that plays into the now."

"Something between you and Dana," Brad prompted.

"Has to be connected, doesn't it? Otherwise it wouldn't follow the pattern. And if it isn't something important, why did he fuck with me?"

"Maybe it's time for a meeting," Brad began.

"For you suits, it's always time for a meeting," Flynn shot back.

"I'm forced to point out that I'm not wearing a suit."

"Inside you are. It's probably pin-striped. And I bet you're wearing a tie too. But I

digress. Maybe the suit's right," he said to Jordan. "The six of us should put our

heads together. Your place." He patted Brad on the shoulder. "You've got more

furniture and better food."

"That works for me. The sooner, the better." Brad glanced at his watch.

"Ha-ha, I

have a meeting. Set it up with the women, let me know."

He stepped back inside to snag his jacket, then jogged out into the rain toward his

car.

Jordan stood watching as Brad drove away. "We get through this one and get to

the last round, his head's going to be on the block."

"You think he doesn't know that?"

"No, I figure he does. I was wondering if Zoe does."

* * *

THE only thing Zoe knew at that moment was that this was one of the biggest

days of her life. She clutched the keys, her keys, in her fist. They were brand

spanking new,

194

to go with the brand spanking new lock sets she'd bought to replace the old ones.

She was going to put the lock on the main door herself-she knew how-first thing.

A kind of rite, she decided. A kind of claiming.

She parked, ran through the rain to the front porch, then waited as her friends

pulled in behind. Malory had the original keys. Besides, it was right that the three

of them went in together.

And wasn't it right, somehow symbolic, that Malory had the original key? That she

and Dana would wait while Malory unlocked the door. The first door.

Malory had completed her part of the quest, and had held her key. Now it was

Dana's turn. Then, God willing, it would be hers.

"Rain's going to strip a lot of the leaves off the trees," Malory commented as she

rushed under the overhang. "There won't be much color left after this."

"It was nice while it lasted."

"Yes, it was." Malory started to unlock the door, then stopped. "It just hit me. It's

ours now. Really ours. Maybe we should say something profound, do something

symbolic."

"I'm not carrying either of you across the threshold." Dana scooped back her damp hair.

"Booty shake," Zoe decided and made Dana laugh.

"Booty shake," she agreed. "On three."

The few people driving by might have been slightly surprised to see three women standing on a pretty blue porch wiggling their butts in front of a closed door.

Giggling, Malory turned the key. "That felt right. And here we go." She opened the door with what she considered a very nice flourish, then her mouth dropped open.

"Oh, my God, look!"

"What?" Instinctively, Zoe grabbed her arm to yank her back. "Is it Kane?"

195

"No, no! Look. Oh, this is so sweet! Look what they did." She rushed inside and

all but buried her face in the roses set on the card table. "Flowers. Our first

flowers. Flynn's going to get such a big reward for this."

"It was really thoughtful of him." Zoe sniffed at the flowers, then opened the

bakery box. "Cookies. The fancy kind. What a sweetheart you've got, Malory."

"He didn't do it alone." Dana pulled the champagne out of the bucket, arched her

eyebrows at the label. "This has Brad's fingerprints all over it. Not just champagne

but stupendous champagne."

Zoe frowned over the label. "That's expensive, isn't it?"

"Not only, but very classy. Only time I ever had it was when Brad gave me a bottle

for my twenty-first birthday. He always had style."

"The three of them did this together, for us." With a long sigh, Malory danced her

fingers over petals. "I'd say all three of them have style."

"Let's not disappoint them." Dana popped the cork, poured champagne into the

three flutes set on the table.

"We need to have a toast." Zoe picked up the flutes, passed them out.

"Let's not do one that makes us cry." Malory took a steadying breath.

"The flowers

have me half started already."

"I've got it." Dana raised her glass. "To Indulgence."

They clinked glasses, sipped. And cried a little anyway.

"I've got something I want to show you." Malory set down her glass, picked up her

briefcase. "Just something I was playing with. I don't want you to feel obligated.

You won't hurt my feelings if you don't like the concept. It's just... just an idea."

"Stop killing us with suspense." Dana picked up a cookie. "Give."

"Okay. I was thinking about a logo, you know something that incorporates all three

businesses. Of course, we

196

might all want separate ones anyway, but we could use one logo for letterhead,

business cards, the Web page."

"Web page." Pursing her lips, Dana nodded. "You're way ahead of me."

"Pays to plan. You remember Tod."

"Sure. Really cute guy you worked with at The Gallery," Dana supplied.

"Right. He's a good friend, too, and he's great at computer design. We could ask

him to fiddle with looks and features for a Web page. Actually, I'm hoping to be

able to offer him a job here. Down the road a little, but being optimistic, I'm going

to need help. We all will."

"I haven't thought that far ahead," Dana admitted. "But yeah, I'll need at least one

part-time bookseller who can handle brewing tea, serving wine. I guess I might

need two people, realistically."

"I've got feelers out for a stylist, a nail consultant. Some others." Zoe pressed a

hand to her jumpy stomach. "Jeez. We're going to have employees."

"I like that part." Dana lifted her champagne glass again. "It's good to be boss."

"We're also going to need a tax consultant, office equipment, signage, an advertising budget, phone systems ... I have lists," Malory finished.

Dana laughed. "I bet you do. Now what else is in the briefcase?"

"Okay. For the logo. This is just something I did from an idea I had."

She pulled out a folder, opened it, then set the drawing on the table.

The figure of a woman sat in a salon chair, tipped back in a pose of easy relaxation. A book was open in her hands, a glass of wine and a single rose in a

bud vase on the table beside her. All this was inside an ornate border that framed

it like a stylized portrait.

Above the border was the single word: INDULGENCE.

197

Below the name, it read FOR THE BODY, THE MIND, AND THE SPIRIT.

"Wow." Managing only the single word, Zoe put a hand on Malory's shoulder.

"It's just a thought," Malory said quickly. "Something to unify what we're all

doing. Since we're using the one name for everything. Then we could have this

sort of thing on our individual cards, letterheads, invoices, whatever, with

something like-I don't know-'Indulgence. For Beauty. Indulgence. For Books.

Indulgence. For Art.' And that would differentiate each aspect while keeping it

under one umbrella."

"It's wonderful," Zoe exclaimed. "It's just wonderful. Dana?"

"It's' perfect. Absolutely perfect, Mal."

"Really? You like it? I don't want to box you hi just because-"

"Let's make a pact," Dana interrupted. "Any time any of us feels boxed in, she just

says so. We're girls, but we're not weenies. Okay?"

"That's a deal. I can give this to Tod," Malory went on. "He could make up a

sample letterhead. He'd do it as a favor. He's better at the desktop-publishing stuff

than I am."

"I can't wait!" Zoe let out a hoot and did a little dance around the room.

"First thing

in the morning, we're going to start some serious work around here."

"Hold on." Dana spread her arms to indicate the walls. "What do you call all this

painting we've been doing?"

"The tip of the iceberg." Still dancing, Zoe grabbed her champagne.

* * *

DANA had never considered herself a slacker. She was willing to work hard,

insisted on pulling her weight, and she got the job done. Anything less was

unacceptable.

198

She'd always viewed herself as a woman with high personal standards-both

personally and professionally, and she tended to sneer at those who skimmed over

work, who complained that the job they'd agreed to take on turned out to be too

hard, too involved, too much trouble.

But compared to Zoe, Dana decided as she dashed into the market to pick up a few

supplies, she was a malingerer. She was a wimpy-assed crybaby. The woman had

worn her out in the first twenty-four hours.

Paint, wallpaper, trim samples, light fixtures, hardware, windows, floor coverings-and the budget for all that and more. And it wasn't just the thinking and

deciding, Dana realized as she pondered a bunch of bananas, that was enough to

make your head explode. It was the labor as well.

Scraping, hauling, stacking, unstacking, drilling, screwing, hammering. Well, there was no doubt about it, she mused as she picked through the oranges.

When it came to the organization, delegation, and implementation of labor, Zoe

McCourt was in charge.

Between the work, the decisions, the worrying search for the key, and her struggle

to keep her head above her heart regarding Jordan, she was completely worn out.

But could she just go home, fall on the bed, and sleep for ten hours? Oh, no, she

thought with a hiss as she moved on to the dairy aisle. No, indeed. She had to

attend a big meeting at Brad's place on the river.

She really needed about two solid hours of absolute solitude and quiet, but she'd

had to trade a portion of that for groceries if she didn't want to starve to death in

the coming week.

On top of that, she no longer had any confidence that she would find the answer to

the key in the stacks of books she'd accumulated. She'd read and read, followed

every lead, but she didn't seem to be any closer to a concrete theory, much less a

solution.

And if she failed, what then? Not only would she let

down her friends, her brother, her lover. Not only would she disappoint Rowena and Pitte, but her inadequacy would doom the Daughters of Glass until the next triad was chosen.

How could she live with that? Depressed now, she tossed a quart of milk in her

basket. She'd seen the Box of Souls with her own eyes, ached to watch those blue

lights battering frantically at their prison walls.

If she couldn't find the key, slide it into the lock as Malory had done with the first,

everything they'd done would be for nothing.

And Kane would win.

"Over my dead body," she declared, then jolted when someone touched her arm.

"Sorry." The woman laughed. "Sorry. It looked like you were arguing with

yourself. I usually don't get to that point until I hit the frozen dessert section."

"Well, you know. Whole milk, low fat, two percent? It's a jungle in here."

Then the woman angled her cart so another shopper could get through.

Pretty, brunette, late thirties, Dana observed, trying to place her. "Sorry. I know

you, don't I? I just can't place it."

"You helped me and my son a couple of weeks ago in the library." She reached for

a gallon of milk. "He had a report due the next day for American history class."

"Oh right, right." Dana made the effort to tuck her dark thoughts away and answer

the smile. "U.S. history report, Mrs. Janesburg, seventh grade."

"That's the one. I'm Joanne Reardon." She offered her hand. "And the life you

saved was my son, Mart's. I stopped back in the library last week to thank you

again, but I was told you weren't there anymore."

"Yeah." That brought some of the dark thoughts back into play. "You could say I

retired abruptly from library service."

"I'm sorry to hear that. You were terrific with Matt. And

200

you made a big difference. He got an A. Well, an A-minus, but anything with

Matt's name on it that includes an A is cause for wild celebration in our house."

"That's great" And particularly good to hear at the end of a long day.

"He must've

done a good job. Mrs. Janesburg doesn't pass out the A's like doughnuts."

"He did, which he wouldn't have done if you hadn't pointed him in the right

direction. More, if you hadn't found the right key to turn in his head. I'm glad I got

the chance to tell you."

"So am I. You picked up my day considerably." "I'm sorry about whatever

happened with the job. It's none of my business, but if you ever need a personal

reference, you can sure have mine."

"Thanks. I mean that. Actually, some friends and I are starting our own business.

I'm going to be opening a bookstore in a month or so. Probably a little more 'or so,'

but we're putting it all together."

"A bookstore?" Joanne's hazel eyes sharpened with interest. "In town?"

"Yeah. A combination thing. A bookstore, an arts and crafts gallery, and a beauty salon. We're fixing up a house over on Oak Leaf."

"That sounds fabulous. What an idea. All that in one place, and in town."

I only live

about a mile and a half from there. I can promise to be one of your regular

customers." "If we keep up the pace, we'll have it up and running for the holiday season."

"Terrific. You wouldn't be hiring, would you?" "Hiring?" Dana eased back,

considered. "Are you looking for a job?"

"I'm thinking about slipping back into the workforce, but I want something close

to home, something fun, and something with fairly flexible hours. What you'd call

a fantasy job. Especially when you consider I haven't worked outside the home in

over a decade, have only recently

201

become computer literate-actually, it may be a stretch to say that-and my main job

experience was as a legal secretary for a mid-level law firm in Philadelphia-where

I did not shine-right out of high school."

She laughed at herself. "I'm not giving myself a very glowing recommendation."

"You like to read?"

"Give me a book and a couple hours of quiet, and all's right with the world. I'm

also good with people, and I'm not looking for a big salary. My husband has a

good job, and we're secure, but I'd like to pull in a little of my own. And I'd like to

do something to earn it that doesn't have anything to do with laundry,
cooking, or
browbeating an eleven-year-old into picking up his room."
"I find those excellent qualifications in a potential employee. Why don't
you come
by the building sometime. It's the house with the blue porch. You can
take a look
at the place, and we'll talk some more."
"This is great I will. Wow." She let out a laugh. "I'm so happy I ran into
you. It
must've been fate."
Fate, Dana mused when they'd parted ways. She hadn't been giving
enough credit
to fate. Needing to restock her pantry had brought her here, to the dairy
section of
her local supermarket.
A small thing, she thought as she continued through the aisles. An
everyday sort
of thing. Bui hadn't it put her here at just the right moment? Bumped her
right into
a woman who might become another spoke on the wheel of her life?
And more than that. She'd bumped into the woman who'd said exactly
what she'd
needed to hear.
You found the right key to turn in his head.
Was it just coincidence that Joanne had used that phrase? Dana wasn't
going to
blow it off as coincidence. No, her key--the right key--was knowledge.
She would find it, Dana promised herself. She would find it by keeping
her mind
open.

Chapter Thirteen

IN Dana's opinion, there were a lot of things you could say about
Bradley Charles
Vane IV.

He was fun, smart, and great to look at. He could, depending on his mood and the circumstances, present a polished, urbane image that made her think of James

Bond ordering a vodka martini in Monte Carlo-and then turn on a dime and

become a complete goofball ready to spray seltzer down your pants.

He could discuss French art films with the passion of a man who didn't require the

subtitles, and be just as fervent in a debate over whether Elmer Fudd or Yosemite

Sam was a more worthy adversary for Bugs.

Those were just some of the things she loved about Brad.

Another was his house.

Towners called it the Vane House, or the River House, and indeed it had been

both for more than four decades.

Brad's father had built it, a testimony to the lumber that formed the foundation of

the Vane empire. Using that lumber,

203

and with a skilled eye for the surroundings, B. C. Vane III had created both the

simple and the spectacular.

The golden frame house spread along the riverbank, edging itself with spacious

decks and charming terraces. There were a number of rooflines and angles, all of

them balanced into a creative harmony that showcased the beauty of wood.

It offered lovely views of the river or the trees or the clever hodgepodge of

gardens.

It wasn't the sort of place you looked at and thought, Money. Rather, you thought,

Wow.

She'd spent some time there, tagging along after Flynn when she was a kid and

tagging along with Jordan when she was older. It was a place where she'd always

felt comfortable. It seemed to her it had been created with comfort as its first

priority and style running a close second.

Another thing you could say about Brad, she decided, was that he didn't skimp on

the refreshments when he had a gathering]

It wasn't anything fancy, at least it wasn't presented that way. Just some sort of

incredible pasta salad that made her contemplate going back for more, a lot of

interesting finger food, ham slices, and some dense, dark bread for sandwich

making.

There was a round of Brie skirted by fat red raspberries, and crackers nearly thin

enough to see through that 'crunched with satisfying delicacy at every bite.

There was beer, mere was wine, there were soft drinks and bottled water.

She already knew she wasn't going to resist the mini cream puffs

mounded in a

tempting island on a platter the size of New Jersey.

All this was spread out casually in the great room, where a fire snapped and

sizzled and the furniture was the kind you could happily sink into for weeks at a

time.

Not fancy, not so you felt like you couldn't rest your feet on the coffee table. Just

classy.

204

That was Bradley Vane, right down to the ground.
Conversation buzzed and hummed around her, and she was drifting into a happy
coma brought on by good food, warmth, and contentment.
Or would, she thought, if Zoe would stop squirming beside her.
"You're going to have to do something about those ants in your pants,"
Dana told
her.

"Sorry." Zoe shot another look toward the archway. "I'm just worried
about
Simon."

"Why? He had a plate with enough food piled on it to feed a starving
battalion, and
he's hunkered down in the game room. A nine-year-old's wet dream."
"There's so much stuff in this house," Zoe whispered. "Expensive stuff.
Art and
glassware and china and things. He's not used to being around all of
this."

Neither am I, she thought, and struggled not to squirm again.

"What if he breaks something?"

"Well." Lazily, Dana popped another raspberry into her mouth. "Then I
guess

Brad'll beat him to a bloody pulp."

"He hits children?" Zoe exclaimed.

"No. Jesus, Zoe, get a grip. The place has survived nine-year-old boys
before-at

least three of them are alive and in this room. Relax. Have a glass of
wine. And

while you're at it, get me some more raspberries."

Half a glass, Zoe thought and got to her feet. But even as she reached for
the

bottle, Brad lifted it.

"You look a little distracted." He poured the wine into a glass, handed it
to her. "Is
there a problem?"

"No." Damn it, she'd only wanted half a glass. Why didn't he stay out of her way?

"I was just-thinking I should check on Simon."

"He's fine. He knows where everything is in the game room. But I'll walk you back

if you want to take a look," Brad added when she frowned.

205

"No. I'm sure he's fine. It's very nice of you to let him play." She knew her voice

was stiff and tight, but she couldn't help it.

"That, rumor has it, is what a game room's for."

Since Brad's voice echoed her tone, Zoe simply nodded. "Um. Dana, she wanted

some more. Of these." Mortified for no reason she could name, she scooped some

of the berries into a bowl, then carried them and her wine back to the couch.

.

"Pompous ass," she said under her breath and had Dana blinking at her.

"Brad?" Dana snatched the bowl of raspberries. "Sorry, honey, you got the wrong number."

Jordan wandered over, sat on the arm of the couch beside Dana and stole a couple

of berries before she could stop him.

"Get your own."

"Yours are better." He reached out to play with her hair. "So, how'd you get this

blond stuff in here?"

"I didn't. Zoe did."

Nipping one more berry, he eased forward to look past Dana, wink at Zoe. "Nice

job."

"Any time you need a haircut, it's on the house."

"I'll remember that." He sat back again. "So, I'm sure you're all wondering why we've brought you here tonight," he began and made Dana laugh. "Now there's a pompous ass." But she laid a hand on his thigh. "I guess since we're here to talk about the key, and I'm the one who's supposed to find it, I'll start."

Handing Jordan what was left of the berries, she pushed herself off the couch and snagged her wineglass from the coffee table. Even as she took the first step, Jordan slid down into her seat. He gave her a quick grin and draped his arm behind Zoe over the back of the couch.

"Come here often?" he asked Zoe.

"I would have, if I'd known you'd be here, handsome."

205

"You guys are just a riot," Dana muttered, then eased past a frowning Brad to the wine bottle. What the hell, she wasn't driving.

"Now, if everybody's all comfy and cozy?" She paused, sipped her wine.

"My key

deals-with knowledge, or truth. I'm not sure the words are interchangeable, but

both, either, or a combination of them applies to my quest. There's also a connection to the past, the now, the future. I'm taking this, after some fiddling

around and dead-ending, to be personal, as applies to me."

"I think you're right about that," Malory put in. "Rowena stresses that we're the

keys. The three of us. And mine was personal. If we're going to consider a pattern,

that's part of it."

"Agreed. The male-type people in this room are part of my past, and of my now.

Odds are, I'm probably going to be stuck with them one way or the other, so they're part of my future as well. We know, too, there are connections among all six of us. My connection to each of you, and yours to me, to each other. There are the paintings from Mal's part of it that added a link."

She, as did the others, glanced at the portrait Brad had hung over the mantel.

Another of Rowena's works, it showed the Daughters of Glass, after the spell that

had taken their souls. Each lay pale and still in their crystal coffin.

"Brad bought that at auction, without knowing what was going to happen here,

just as Jordan bought one of Rowena's paintings, the young Arthur on the point of

drawing the sword from the stone, at the gallery where Malory used to work. Also

years before we knew what we know now. So... this, in turn, connects all of us

with Rowena and Pitte and the goddesses."

"And Kane," Zoe added. "I don't think it's smart to leave him out."

"You're right," Dana agreed. "And Kane. He's messed with most of us already, and

it's pretty clear he'll mess

207

with us again. We know he's bad. We know he's powerful. But those powers aren't

without limits."

"Or someone or something limits him. He took a slice out of me," Jordan continued. "Then Rowena sends a little potion home with Dana. You guys saw

this yesterday." He opened his shirt. The cuts were now only fading welts. "They

started healing minutes after we slapped the stuff on them. The point is, whatever

he did couldn't hold up against Rowena. And whatever she did to counter it

couldn't erase it completely."

"To which we conclude," Dana finished for him, "that they're pretty evenly

matched."

"He has weaknesses." Absently Jordan rebuttoned his shirt. "Ego, pride, temper."

"Who said those were weaknesses?" Dana wandered over, sat on the arm of the

chair Brad had taken. "Anyway, it's more. He doesn't really get us-the whole

human or mortal thing. He doesn't get us as individuals. He skims the surface,

picks up on our little fantasies or fears, but he doesn't really get to the core-or

hasn't. That's how Malory beat him."

"Yes, but when he has hold of you, it's hard to see clearly, hard to know." Malory

shook her head. "We can't underestimate him."

"I'm not. But up to now, I think, he has underestimated us."

Thoughtfully, Dana

studied the portrait. "He wants them to suffer, simply because part of them is

mortal. Rowena talked of opposing forces: beauty and ugliness, knowledge and

ignorance, courage and cowardice. How without one the other loses its punch. So

he's the dark, and you can't have light without dark. I figure he's essential to the

whole deal, not just an annoyance."

She hesitated, then took a drink. "It's no secret that Jordan and I were intimate. I

don't think it's any secret that we're ... intimate now."

Jordan waited a beat. "I've never known you to get flustered talking about sex, Stretch."

208

"I just want to make it clear to ... people. To you, that I'm not sleeping with you as

a way to find the key. Even if that has something to do with it," she continued

quickly, "because as somebody told me recently, sex is powerful magic-"

"If you do it right," Jordan interrupted.

"So let's see what we know," Brad said, trying to get back on track.

"None of this

would have happened-past- without Kane." Brad tapped his index fingers together,

"His presence and manipulations influence the search for "the key.

Present." He

held up a second finger, "And there's no finish to the spell without him."

And a

third. "He's a necessary factor. There's no reward without work, no victory without

effort, no battle won without risk."

"It's another traditional element of a quest," Jordan added. "An evil to be overcome." ^

"I understand all this," Zoe said. "And it's important. But how does it help Dana

find the key?"

"Know your enemy," Brad told her.

"That nutshelled it," Dana agreed. <

"But there's more," Flynn noted. "Blood has been shed. Another traditional quest

element. I can read, too," he said. "Why was it Jordan's blood? There's a reason for

it."

"Might be because Jordan pissed him off, which he's really good at doing," Dana said. "But more likely it's because I need Jordan to find the key." "Stretch, you need me for so many things." "Let's ignore the ego burst and stay focused." Dana gestured with her glass. "The key's knowledge. Something I know, or have to learn. A truth that has to be sifted out from lies. Kane mixes his truth and lies. What is it he's said or done that's truth? That's one of the angles I'm playing. Then there's the last bit of the clue. Where one goddess walks another waits. That's a stumper so far. Malory's goddess was singing, and she re-created that moment, and the key, by painting it. Following that, my goddess, Niniane,

209

should be walking. But where, why, when? And which goddess waits? Would that be Zoe's?" "Maybe you're supposed to write it," Zoe suggested. "Like a story, I mean. The way Malory painted hers." "That's not bad." Dana considered. "The thing is, I never wanted to write, not like Malory wanted to paint. But maybe it's something I'm supposed to read, and God knows I'm not hitting on anything in the six million books I've gone through so far. So maybe I have to write it myself, first." "Maybe Jordan does." Flynn played absently with Malory's hair as he thought it through. "He's the writer- not to diminish my own considerable talent, but I report. He just makes shit up."

"Really good shit," Jordan reminded him.

"Goes without saying. I'm thinking here that if for nothing other than the cohesion

and the exercise, Jordan could write all this out. In story form. Maybe when Dana

reads it, the scales will fall from her eyes, she'll pull out the key, and we can all

have a party, with cake."

"It's not an entirely stupid idea," Dana decided.

"I think it's great." Zoe shifted in her seat to beam at Jordan. "Will you do it? I just

love reading your books, and this would be even more fun."

"For you, gorgeous?" He picked up her hand and kissed it. "Anything."

"I'm feeling a little queasy." Dana patted her stomach. "How soon will you have

something I can see?" she asked Jordan.

"Okay, now you sound like an editor. It could force me to have a creative tantrum

and slow everything down."

"Do you? Have creative tantrums, I mean." To Zoe, the idea was fascinating. "I've

always wondered how it works, with artists and all."

"Oh, God, now she's called him an artist." Dana got to her feet. "I must go home

and lie down."

Ignoring her, Jordan gave Zoe his attention. "No, not

210

really. It's a job, just happens to be a really great job. My editor-my real editor," he

added with a glance at Dana, "is a woman of discerning taste, skill, and diplomacy."

"Your editor's a woman? How does it work? Do you work with her all the way

through a book, or does she tell you what she wants you to do, or..." She trailed

off, shook her head. "Sorry. Way, way off topic."

"It's okay. Do you want to write?"

"Write? Me?" The idea had her exotic eyes going wide before she laughed. "No. I

just like knowing how things work."

"Speaking of work, we've got a full day of it tomorrow." Malory gave Flynn's hand

a pat.

"That's my cue. I'll go round up Moe for you," Flynn told Dana.

"I'm running low on dog food. He eats like an elephant."

"I'll drop some off." He caught her face in his hands. "Keep him close, okay?"

"He doesn't give me a lot of choice." '

"Flynn, would you round up Simon, too?" Automatically, Zoe began stacking

dishes. "He's probably attached to Moe at the hip, so he shouldn't give you any

trouble."

"Sure."

"We'd better cut out too. I'm going to see if I can get this One started on his

homework." Dana jerked a thumb at Jordan. "Any tips for that, Zoe?"

"Bribery. That's my method."

Brad stepped over, laid a hand on Zoe's. And made her jump like a rabbit. "You

don't have to bother with those."

"Sorry." She instantly set the plates down. "Habit."

It seemed to Brad that the woman deliberately misinterpreted every second word

out of his mouth. "I just meant you don't have to pick up. Anybody want coffee?"

"I do."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

"No, you don't." Dana gave Jordan a nudge toward the doorway. "It's work for you, pal. You can have coffee when you've gotten a couple of pages done." "Bribery." Zoe nodded approval. "It never fails."

Moe bounded into the room, a wild blur of fur. In his delight to see everyone, he leaped, licked, swept glasses off the coffee table with an exuberant tail, and nosed his way into a plate of cocktail shrimp before he could be controlled. "Sorry, sorry." With one hand hooked in Moe's collar, Flynn dragged the dog, or was dragged by him, toward the door. "I'll put him in Jordan's car. Bill me for damages. See you. Oh, Zoe, Simon needs a few more minutes to finish a game. Jesus Christ, Moe! Hold up!"

"This is my life now," Malory said happily. "It's kind of great. Thanks, Brad, sorry about the dishes. See you tomorrow, Zoe, Dana. 'Night, Jordan." "I have to go save my upholstery." Jordan grabbed Dana's arm and pulled her toward the door. "Later."

"Stop yanking me. Smooches, Brad. See you in the morning, Zoe." The door slammed behind them, and there was absolute silence. It had all happened so fast, was all Zoe could think. She'd never intended to be the last one to leave. It was horrible. Horrifying.

She considered running into the game room and grabbing Simon, but she wasn't exactly sure where it was. And she could hardly stand where she was and shout for him. Still, she needed to do something.

She bent down to pick up the glasses Moe had knocked to the floor. At exactly the same moment, so did Brad.

Their heads bumped. Each of them straightened quickly, then stood taut as bows.

"I'll get them." He crouched, gathered up the glasses, set them on the coffee table.

He was close enough to catch

212

NORA ROBERTS

her scent now. It was always different, sometimes earthy, sometimes light, always very female.

It was one of the fascinating things about her, he mused. The variety of her.

"Coffee?"

"I really should just get Simon. It's nearly his bedtime."

"Oh. Well. Okay."

When he just stood, looking at her, Zoe felt embarrassed heat creeping up the back

of her neck. Had she done something wrong? Left out something?

"Thanks for having us."

"Glad you could make it."

During the next long pause, she had to make a conscious effort not to bite her lip.

"Simon? I don't know exactly where he is."

"The game room. Oh." Amused at both of them, Brad laughed. "You don't know

where the game room is. Come on, I'll take you back."

The more Zoe saw of the house, the more in love with it, and intimidated by it, she

was. To begin with, there was so much of it, all of it charming or stunning or just

lovely. She imagined the things she noticed on tables or shelves were several

levels up from knickknacks.

Brad veered off through an archway into what she assumed was some sort of

library. The soaring ceiling was done in wood and made the room feel open while still managing to be cozy.

"There's so much room." She stopped, appalled that she'd spoken out loud.

"The story is, once my father got started, he couldn't stop. He'd get another idea, add it into the design."

"It's a wonderful house," she said quickly. "So much detail without being fussy.

You must've loved growing up here."

"I did."

He stepped into another room. Zoe already heard the

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

213

roar of engines, the vicious gunfire, the breathless chant- come on, come on, come on-of her son.

The video game was some sort of urban car war that flashed over an enormous

wall-size TV screen. Simon sat cross-legged on the floor rather than in one of the

cushy recliners in a room that fulfilled every boy's fantasy.

A pool table, three pinball machines, two video-arcade games. Slot machines, a

soda machine, a jukebox.

The ceiling here was coffered, framed in honey-toned wood that shielded strips of lights.

There was another fireplace, with cheerful flames snapping, as well as a small,

glossy bar and a second television with an entire cabinet devoted to various

components.

"Gosh. This is Simon Michael McCourt's personal version of heaven."

"My dad loves toys. We spent a lot of time in here."

"I bet." She stepped up behind her son. "Simon. We have to go."

"Not yet, not yet." His face was fierce with concentration. "This is Grand Theft

Auto Three! I'm really close, really close to having them call out the National

Guard. Tanks and everything! I'm kicking Swat Team butt. I could set a record.

Ten more minutes."

"Simon. Mr. Vane needs his house back."

"Mr. Vane is fine with this," Brad corrected.

"Please, Mom. Please. Tanks."

She wavered. She saw more than the heat of competition on his face as he stared

at the screen. She saw joy.

Someone died on-screen with a great deal of splashing blood, and from the

delighted cackle she figured it wasn't Simon.

"It's a little violent," Brad realized and winced. "If you don't want him playing this

sort of thing-

"Simon knows the difference between reality and video games."

2M. NORA ROBERTS

"Right. Good. Why don't we go have that coffee?" Brad suggested. "A few more

minutes can't hurt."

"All right. Ten minutes, Simon."

"Okay, Mom, thanks, Mom. I'm going to do it," he mumbled, already back in the

groove. "I'm going to do it."

"It's nice of you to let him play with your things," Zoe began as they left Simon to

the battle. "He talked about being out here before for days."

"He's a great kid. Fun to be around."

"I certainly think so."

She found herself in the kitchen with him-another spacious, stunning room. This one done in bright, cheerful white and toasty yellows that would make it seem sunny even on a gloomy day. She coveted the acres of counter space, the forest of cupboards, some with gorgeous seeded glass. She admired * the sleek appliances that had to make cooking a creative joy rather than a mundane chore. Then it occurred to her that she was, once again, alone with him.

/• '

"You know, I should just go back with Simon, and let you ... do whatever. We'll be out of your way quicker."

He finished measuring out coffee before he turned to her. "Why do you think I want you out of my way?"

"I'm sure you have things to do."

"Not so much."

"Well, I do. A million things. I should really be ready to pry Simon away before he loses control and starts another game. I'll just go get him, and we'll let ourselves out."

"I don't get it." Forgetting the coffee, Brad stepped closer to her. "I really don't get it."

"What?"

"You're comfortable enough with Flynn and Jordan to flirt with them, but two minutes with me and you're not only blowing cold, you're halfway out the door."

"It's not flirting." Her voice went sharp. "Not like that."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

21S

We're friends. They're Malory's and Dana's boyfriends, for Pete's sake.
And if you

think I'm the sort of person who'd-"

"Then there's that," Brad continued with what he considered admirable
calm. "The

way you automatically jump to conclusions, usually the wrong ones,
when it

comes to me."

"I don't know what you're talking about. In the first place, I barely know
you."

"That's not true. People get to know each other pretty quickly in intense
situations.

We're in one, and we've been in one for close to two months now. We've
spent

time together, we have good mutual friends, and you've cooked me
dinner."

"I didn't cook you dinner." Her chin came up. "You happened to be at
the house

when I cooked dinner. You ate. That's different."

"Point for you," he acknowledged. "You know, for some reason your
response to

me causes me to start sounding like my father when he's annoyed.

There's this tone

he gets in his voice, this change of body language. Used to bug the hell
out of me

when I was a kid."

"I have no intention of bugging the hell out of you. We'll leave."

In Brad's mind there was a time for talk and there was a time for action.

When you

were fed up, it was time for action. -He closed a hand over her arm to
keep her in

place, watched temper and nerves rush across her truly spectacular face.

"There it is," he told her. "Your usual response to me. Annoyance and/or

nervousness. I've been asking myself why that is. I spend a lot of time asking myself questions about you."

"Then you must have a lot of time to waste. Let go. I'm leaving."

"And one of my theories is," he continued easily, "this."

He cupped his other hand at the nape of her neck, pulled her forward, and kissed

her.

21(5

NORA ROBERTS

He'd wanted to kiss her for weeks. Maybe for years. He'd wanted the taste of her

on his lips, on his tongue, in his blood. And the feel of her, he thought as he

slipped an arm around her waist to bring her more firmly against him.

Her mouth was so full, so ripe, and much more potent than he'd anticipated. Her

body quivered once against his, his shock, his response. At the moment it didn't matter.

Just as it didn't matter if this single act was taken as a declaration of war or an offer of peace. He only knew he'd slowly been going mad waiting to hold her.

She'd hesitated instead of pushing him away. And that, she would think later,

when thinking was an option again, was her mistake.

He was warm and hard, and his mouth was skilled. And God, it had been so long

since she'd been pressed against a man. She felt the need lift inside her, from the

toes to the belly to the throat, followed by that long, lovely pull and flutter that

took it all the way back down.

For one mad moment, she drew him in. The male scent and flavor, the strength and the passion, and let it tumble through her hi a kind of joyful spree. It was like a carnival, like the giddiest of rides when you couldn't be sure-not absolutely--that you wouldn't be flung out of your seat and into the air. And wasn't that fabulous? Then she slammed on the brakes. What choice did she have? She knew what happened when you rode too fast, too hard, too high. And this wasn't her place, this wasn't her man. What was hers-her child-was playing in the next room. She pulled out of Brad's arms. He was shaken, right down to the soles of his feet, but he stared into her eyes and nodded coolly. "I think that made my point." She was no quaking virgin, and a long way from being an easy mark. She didn't step back, that would have been

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

217

retreat, but stood firm and kept her eyes level with his. "Let's get a few things straight. I like men. I like their company, their conversation, then-humor. I happen to be raising one of my own, and I intend to do a good job of it." She looked, he thought, like an angry, and aroused, wood nymph. "You are doing a good job of it." "I like kissing men-the right man, the right circumstances. I like sex, under the same conditions." His eyes warmed to a deep, foggy gray that was unexpected and compelling. The

charming creases in his cheeks-too manly, Zoe thought, to be called dimplesdeepened.

Her fingers itched to trace those creases, and the sensation warned her she was in trouble.

"That's a relief to me."

"You'd better understand that I make the conditions at this point in my life. The

fact that I have a kid and I'm not married doesn't make me easy."

Angry shock leaped into his face. "For Christ's sake, Zoe. Where did we veer from

me finding you interesting and attractive and wanting to kiss you to finding you easy?"

"I want to be clear, that's all. Just like I'm going to be clear that nobody uses my

kid to get to me."

The shock, the anger iced over. The chill hit him from a foot away. "If you assume

that's what I'm doing, you're insulting all three of us."

She felt twin jolts of guilt and embarrassment. As she started to speak, Simon flew

into the room. "I rale! Beat your high score, sucker!" He danced around Brad,

shaking his index fingers in the air in a victory dance.

With effort, Brad folded his emotions further inside, then hooked an arm around

Simon's neck. "A momentary event, I promise you. Gloat while you have the

chance, you midget."

"Next time I'm beating your butt in the NBA play-offs."

"Never happen. And when I humiliate you, you will

£18

NORA ROBERTS

crawl to me on your belly like the insignificant worm you are."

As she watched the exchange, saw their obvious enjoyment of each other, her guilt only increased. "Simon, we have to go."
"Okay. Thanks for letting me mop the floor with ya." "I'm just luring you in, so crushing you will be more gratifying." With his arm still around the boy, he looked at the mother. "I'll get your coats."

v_/hapter fourteen

SINCE it became apparent, very quickly, that Dana wasn't handy with home improvement chores that involved tools, she was designated head painter. Which meant, she thought, a little sulkily, that she spent all day slapping paint on walls while Zoe went around doing stuff with a cool little electric screwdriver or drill and Malory putzed around with the leak under the kitchen sink. The fact that Malory was the girliest girl of Dana's acquaintance and that she got a wrench was lowering.

It wasn't that she minded painting so much-even though it was incredibly boring, despite the magic roller machine. She just could've used a little variety on her job list.

Still, watching the walls take on color was satisfying. Malory and Zoe had been on the money in the choice. Her bookstore section was going to look not only warm but stylish.

Zoe swore that once the floors were sanded and sealed, they would glow.

220

NORA ROBERTS

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

221

She knew how it could look. Kane had shown her. And if he'd used her own fantasy to build the image, that was fine. This was one fantasy she was going to make sure came true.

As an idea struck, she stopped, turned off the machine, set the roller aside. /

The truth in his lies. Her fantasy, and his manipulation of it.

What if the key was here, as Malory's had been? Why couldn't it be that simple?

He'd shown her, hadn't he? Look what you can have, if you only cooperate with

me: your dream bookstore, full of customers and stock. Not real, she thought now,

not truth. But there'd been truth in it. It was what she wanted, what she intended to

work for. What she could have, with her own effort and on her own merits.

Maybe the key was right here, if she could only see it. If she could bring it out as

Malory had.

She took some deep breaths, shaking her arms, rolling her shoulders, like a diver

about to spring off the high platform. ' Then

she closed her eyes, tried to let herself drift. She could hear the whirr of Zoe's drill,

and the cheerful music that Malory had playing on the radio.

What was that? ABBA? Jesus, couldn't she find a station that recognized music

from this millennium?

Annoyed with herself, Dana struggled to erase the image of a teenage dancing queen from her mind.

The key. The pretty gold key. It was small, shiny, with that looping Celtic pattern at the hilt. Was it a hilt when it was a key? she wondered. It wasn't a damn sword,

so there had to be another word for it. She'd have to look that up. Oh, stop it!

She huffed out another breath, and focused. The whirr of the drill, the tinkle of music, and beyond that, the muffled sound of cars passing on the street outside.

The hum of the furnace as it kicked on.

And if you listened hard enough, she realized, the creaks and whispers of an old

house settling into its own bones.

Her house. Hers. The first she'd ever owned. A step out of the past toward the

future. A single, definite move that changed the pattern of what had been toward what would be.

She could smell fresh paint, a testament to a new start.

Those things were real, as real as her own flesh and blood. Those things were truth.

The key was real. She had only to see it, to touch it, to take it.

She saw it now, floating on a field of peacock green, shimmering against that deep

color. But when she reached out, her hand passed through it as if it, or she, was

insubstantial.

I'm the key. It's meant for me.

She tried again, again, bearing down with the effort until sweat pearled on her forehead.

It's mine, she kept thinking. And this place is mine. Soon books will be lined along

this wall, other walls. Knowledge.

"Dana!"

She snapped back, swayed even as Zoe's hands caught her arms. "What did he do

to you? What did he do? Malory!"

"No, I'm okay. I'm fine."

"You don't look fine. Hold on to me. Mai!" she shouted again.

Dana calculated she had a good thirty pounds on Zoe, but her friend managed to

hold her upright and steady.

"What is it? What's wrong?" With a crescent wrench gripped like a weapon in her

hand, Malory rushed in. For some reason, seeing the pretty, feminine blonde in her

plumber's gear of sexy black leggings and slim green sweater-with matching hair

tie-wielding a wrench had Dana giggling weakly.

"Kane. Kane had her. She was in some sort of trance."

2E2

NORA ROBERTS

"No. It wasn't Kane. I'm a little dizzy. Maybe I should just sit down."

She slid to the floor, taking Zoe with her. "Oh, God. Are you pregnant?"

"What?"

The shock went a long way toward clearing her head as she goggled at Zoe. "No.

Jeez. I just started having sex again, remember? Would you two stop staring at me

as if I were about to start speaking in tongues?"

"Here. Have some water." Zoe pulled a bottle from the holster on her tool belt.

"I'm okay." But she gulped down the water. "I was just experimenting with a little self-hypnosis."

"Here, let me have that." Malory reached for the water, took a deep drink. "You scared the hell out of me."

"Sorry. I had this idea that the key's here. Yours was- and the whole past, present, future thing. The store, our-' businesses. The books I'm going to be hauling in here. Truth in lies. How Kane showed me the place all finished and full of those books and customers buying them."

"Okay. I'm following." Zoe pulled out a red-and-white bandanna and dabbed at

Dana's brow. "But what happened? When I walked in you were standing in the middle of the room with your arm out in front of you. Kind of swaying, with your eyes closed. Honey, you looked really spooky."

"I was trying to, you know, bring the key out. See the key. Be the key. Shit, that sounds stupid."

"No, it doesn't." Handing the water back to Zoe, Malory considered. "It's a good idea. It could be here. Hell, it could be anywhere, so why not here?"

"A good idea," Zoe agreed. "But I don't think you should try something like that

alone. It could be like opening yourself up to him, with nobody around to keep you

steady. Like a control group, or backup. You really looked out of it, Dana."

"You've got a point." But she smiled. "Stop fussing,

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

£23

Mom." To lighten the mood, she pinched Zoe's biceps. "You're a lot stronger than

you look. You work out regular?"

"A little here and there. Mostly I'm just built." And her heart rate settled down

again. "You look better now. Maybe we could try something like this, with the three of us."

"It might be worth a shot," Malory agreed.

"If you're up to it, Dana. We could sit right here, link hands. Mai and I could sort

of push our energy toward you."

"Perhaps you recall a small incident last month involving a Ouija board?" Dana asked.

"Not likely to forget." Zoe gave a quick shudder. "But we wouldn't be using

anything but our own connection. It's not like we're playing around with the dark

arts, or whatever it is."

"Okay." Lips pursed, Dana looked around. "But it seems kind of silly.

The three of

us sitting on a drop cloth in an empty, half-painted room trying to conjure up a

magic key. But..." She gripped Zoe's hand, then Malory's. "I'm in."

"Mai, maybe you could give her some tips. What it was like for you, what you did."

"I don't know if I can explain it. So much of it just happened. It's like being in a

dream, but knowing you're • dreaming, and at the same time knowing it's not a

dream."

"That's a big help." But with a half laugh, Dana squeezed her hand.

"Actually, I

know what you mean. It's the way I felt when he took me into the bookstore."

"I don't know how I understood what to do, but it was suddenly so clear.

The one

thing was focusing on what I had to do without letting him know I was focusing

on it. And that was hard, really hard, but part of that was because I was so scared.

For me, it helped to concentrate on painting, the actual art and act. The colors, the

tone, the detail. I don't know if that helps you."

"I don't know either. So let's find out."

224

NORA ROBERTS

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

225

"We're not going to let anything happen to you," Zoe told her. "We're going to be

right here."

"Okay."

Taking that long breath, Dana shut her eyes. It was a comfort to feel the hands

gripped hers. Like an anchor, she supposed, that would prevent her from

floating off somewhere she shouldn't go.

She let herself listen again to the sounds of the house, to her own quiet, steady

breathing matching the rhythm of her friends'. She smelled paint, and perfume.

There was the key again, shining on the colored field she now realized was the

wall she'd just painted. Her wall, with the color chosen by the woman
flanking
her.

But when she reached out for it with her mind, she could bring it no
closer.

She struggled with impatience and tried to imagine how the key would
feel in her

hand. Smooth, she thought, and
cool.

No, it would have heat. It held power. She would feel that fire from
which it was

forged, and when she closed her fist over it, it would fit easily in her
palm.

Because she was meant to hold it.

The color washed away to a strong white lined with black. The key
seemed to melt

into it, a shimmering gold pool that dripped over black and white, then
faded

away.

In her mind she heard a long sigh. A woman's sigh. And felt, heard, a
rush of wind

that smelled like autumn burning.

She walked at night, and was the night with all its shadows and all its
secrets.

When she wept, she wept for day.

The words that ran through her mind brought such an ache she thought
her heart

might bleed dry from it, as from a mortal wound. In defense, she shut
them off.

Everything faded again. And she could smell the paint,
and the perfume.

She opened her eyes, saw her friends watching her.

"Honey, are you all right?" Zoe spoke gently as she freed her hand from
Malory's

and touched Dana's cheek.

"Sure. Yeah."

"You're crying." Zoe dried Dana's cheek with the bandanna.

"Am I? I don't know why. Something hurt, I guess. You know." She pressed a hand to her heart. "In here. I don't know where it is. I still don't know where the key is."

She scrubbed the heels of her hands over her face and told them what she'd imagined.

"She walks at night," Malory repeated. "The goddess walks."

"Yeah. It sounded sort of familiar, but I could've made it up. Or it could apply to

Niniane. I just know it made me horribly sad."

She got to her feet, walked to the window to open it. She needed air.

"She's alone

in the dark-that's how I think of her. They're all alone in the dark. If I don't do what

needs to be done, they'll stay in the dark."

Zoe walked over to press her cheek to the back of Dana's shoulder.

"They've got

each other, and they've got us. Don't beat yourself up. You're trying."

"And I think you're getting somewhere." Malory joined them at the window. "I'm

not saying that to be annoyingly optimistic. You're putting the different parts of

Rowena's clue together. Your brain's working them out, shifting them ajound,

trying to make them fit. And I think with this last attempt, you've started to use

your heart.

"It's not just your mind that has to be open," Malory added when Dana turned her

head to stare at her. "Your heart has to be. That's one thing I learned.

You can't

take that last leap otherwise. You won't be ready to risk what's on the other side."

SHE didn't know why it bothered her, bothered her to the point of anger. Open her

heart? What was that supposed to

226 NORA ROBERTS

mean? Was she supposed to strip her emotions bare so any-1 one could come in on

a whim and dance all over them?

Wasn't it enough that she was working her ass off, giving herself headaches with

hours of research, note-taking, calculating, and supposition?

She cared, damn it, she thought as she slammed into her apartment. She cared

about those three young women, half goddess, half mortal, and trapped for eternity

inside a glass

prison.

She had shed tears for them, would shed blood- if necessary.

How much more open did she have to be? Tired, achy, irritable, she strode to the

kitchen, popped the top on a beer, ripped open a bag of pretzels to go with it. She

dropped into a chair in the living room to sip, munch, and sulk. Take the last leap?

She was going up against an ancient and powerful sorcerer. She was risking nearly

every cent she had on a new business. She'd ordered shelving and tables, chairs,

and books. Let's not forget the books.

Then there was the cappuccino machine, the individual teapots, the glassware, the

paper products that would max out her credit card in very short order.

And she was doing it all without any projected income. If that wasn't a goddamn leap, what was? Easy for Malory to talk about open hearts and last leaps. She'd already done her part, and was all cozied up with Flynn in connubial bliss. Got your house and your dog and your man, Dana thought with a scowl. Congratulations all around. And, God, she was being such a bitch. She let her head fall back and stared up at the ceiling. "Face it, Dana, you're jealous. Not only did Malory come through the test with a big fat A, she earned all the goodies. And here you are, spinning your wheels, sleeping

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

£27

with a man who's already broken your heart once, and terrified you're going to blow it all."

She hauled herself up at the knock on her door, and took the beer with her to answer.

Moe shoved his nose into her crotch by way of greeting, then rushed past her to

claim the mangled rope he'd left on the rug during his last visit.

He pranced back, ears flopping, to whack the rope hopefully against her knees.

"You didn't come by to get Moe," Jordan commented.

"I forgot." She shrugged, then walked back and dropped into the chair again.

Jordan closed the door behind him, tossed the manila envelope he carried on a

table. He knew that look, he thought as he studied Dana's face. She was sulking

and working her way up to a serious mad.

"What's going on?"

"Nothing much." Since Moe was trying to crawl into her lap, she tugged the rope

out of his teeth and tossed it to Jordan.

It had the expected and for her, gratifying, result of causing Moe to charge him

like a bull charges a matador. And like a matador uses his cape, Jordan flicked the

rope down and to the side: Man and dog played tug-of-war while dog growled

playfully and man stared at woman.

"Long day? I was going to come by and give you a hand, but I got caught up in

stuff."

"We're managing everything."

"An extra pair of hands couldn't hurt."

"You want to put your hands to good use?"

"It's a thought."

"Fine." She pushed out of the chair, headed toward the bedroom. "Bring them

along with you."

Jordan lifted a brow at Moe. "Sorry, kiddo, you're on your own. I think I'm about to

play a different sort of game."

£28

NORA ROBERTS

He followed Dana into the bedroom, shut the door. He heard Moe collapse on the

other side with a huge doggie sigh.

She'd already stripped off her sweatshirt and shoes and was unbuttoning her jeans.

"Lose the clothes." "Got an itch, Stretch?"

"That's right." She wiggled out of the jeans, tossed back her hair. "Got any

problem scratching it?"

"Can't seem to think of one." He shrugged out of the coat, threw it aside. He got rid of his shoes, his shirt, while she pulled down the covers. He'd been off about her mood, he realized. She'd already worked herself up to a good mad and was looking for a handy place to put it. When she reached up to unclasp her bra, he stepped-over, gripped her hands, trapping her-for one erotic moment-behind her. Then he released her to trail his fingers down her spine. "Leave something for me, will you?" She shrugged, then fisting a hand in his hair, yanked his mouth to hers. She used her teeth, her nails, setting the mood for fast, hot sex with just a hint of mean. She wasn't looking for fancy touches or soft flourishes but for sweat and speed. She felt his body's instant response, the hard hammer blow of his heart, the lightning strike of heat that punched out of him and straight through her. His mouth fed off hers, and his hands began to take, fingers digging in to brand and bruise. She was already wet and ready when she shoved him back on the bed. She would have straddled him and made quick work of it, but he flipped her over, trapped her body under his. Set his teeth on her breast. Her hips jerked, her hands clamped on his, and she ground herself against him in frantic, furious demand.

His vision hazed with red as the fierce bite of need tore

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

through his system. He yanked her bra down to her waist, filled his mouth with her even as he shoved his hand between them, drove his fingers into the heat of her and shot her brutally over the edge. She exploded under him, her body writhing, straining, then gathering itself for another leap. Her nails bit into him, her hips pistoned until he was as wild as she. They rolled, grappling for more in a slippery, mindless battle mat had thrill ramming into thrill. Her mouth was fevered and ravenous, her hands greedy and swift. He knew he'd rather die warring with her than live in peace with anyone else. With her breath sobbing, she rose over him and took him inside her with one hard thrust. The dark glory of it gushed through her, flooded her until the anger and doubts drowned. This was real, she told herself. This was enough. And she watched him watch her take him. Fast and hot, focused on those twin goals of pleasure and release. She rode him with a ruthless energy that turned her own body into a morass of greed. For speed, for passion. For more. When she felt his fingers vise her hips, when she saw those brilliant blue eyes go blind, she threw her head back and flew off the end of the world with him.

She was still shuddering as she slid down to him. Her breath was as ragged as his when her head fell heavy on his shoulder. He managed to hook an arm around her and decided he would probably regain feeling in his extremities at some point.

For now, it was just fine to lie there bruised, battered, and blissful.

"Feel better?" he asked her.

"Considerably. You?"

"No complaints. When my ears stop ringing, you might want to tell me what set

you off today."

230 NORA ROBERTS

"

"No one thing." She lifted her head just enough to sweep her hair aside so she

could feel her cheek against his flesh. "I just feel like I'm fumbling at most

everything, but then I remembered this is one thing I do really well."

"You won't hear any argument from me on the last part.

What's the fumble?"

"You want the list? I feel like I'm so close to finding the key, then I don't. Then I

feel like I'm miles away from it, and the whole business is going to crash and burn.

I spent most of the day painting because I exhibited very little, if any, aptitude for

hand tools."

"Then you probably don't want me to mention you've got some paint in your hair."

She heaved a sigh. "I know it. Even Malory's better with a screwdriver than I am,

and she's a total girl. And Zoe? She's a regular Bob Vila with breasts.

Did you

know she's got her belly button pierced?"

"Really?" There was a long pause. "Really," he repeated with enough male interest

to make her laugh.

"Anyway." She flopped over on her back. "There was all that, then I started doing

some mental number crunching and got depressed realizing how close to the edge

financially all this stuff is taking me. All the output, no income-and without the

output there'll never be an income. And even when the income comes, it's going to

be a serious juggling act for the foreseeable future."

"I could lend you some money, give you some breathing room." Her silence spoke

volumes. "It'd be an investment. Writer-bookstore. Makes sense."

"I'm not interested in a loan." Her voice had chilled, and just under the chill was a

sulk. "I'm not looking for another partner."

"Okay." He shrugged it off, then tugged on her hair. "I've got it. I can pay you for

sex. Like you said, you are really good at it. But I'd get to set the price for each

specific

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE 231

act, and I think there should be something in the rates about buy three, get one

free. We'll work it out."

Since he was watching her face, he saw her dimples flutter as she struggled with a

grin. "You're a pervert." She rolled over on her stomach, braced herself on her

elbows. "It was nice of you to reach down into the gutter to cheer me up."

"We do what we can." He trailed a finger down her cheek. "I bet you could use

some food. You want to go out to eat?"

"I absolutely don't want to go out."

"Good. Neither do I." He shifted a bit, worked considerable charm into his

expression. "I don't suppose you'd care to cook."

"I don't suppose I would."

"All right. I will."

She blinked, then sat up and tapped her fingers on her head. "Excuse me, did you

just say you'd cook?"

"Don't get excited. I was thinking of something along the lines of scrambled eggs

or grilled-cheese sandwiches."

"Let's damn the cholesterol and have both." She leaned down, gave him a quick

kiss. "Thanks. I'm going to grab a shower."

WHEN she came out, comfortable in sweats, he was in the kitchen, pouring eggs

into one skillet while sandwiches browned in another, and the dog inhaled a bowl

of kibble.

He was missing the frilly apron, Dana noted, but all in all, he made a hell of a

picture.

"Look at Mr. Domestic."

"Even living in New York, it pays to be able to throw an emergency meal together.

You want to get out plates?"

New York, she thought, as she opened a cabinet. It wouldn't do to forget the guy

lived in New York and wasn't

going to be making her grilled-cheese sandwiches on a regular basis.

She pushed the thought away, set the table, and added a couple of candles for the fun of it.

"Nice," she said over the first bite when they'd settled down. "Really, thanks."

"My mother used to make me grilled-cheese sandwiches when I was feeling out of sorts."

"They're comforting-the toasty bread, the butter, the warm, melty cheese."

"Mmm. Look, if you're interested in my hands doing more than driving you wild

with passion, I can give you some time tomorrow."

"If you've got it."

"I'd have come by today, but I had homework." He pointed toward the envelope

he'd dropped when he'd come in.

"Oh. You wrote everything up."

"Think I got it all. You can look it over, see if I left anything out."

"Cool." She got up, hurried across the room to fetch the envelope.

"Didn't anyone ever tell you it's impolite to read at the table?"

"Certainly not." Tossing back her hair, she settled back down. "It's never impolite

to read." She tapped out the pages, surprised to see how many there were. "Busy

boy."

He forked up more eggs. "I figured it would work better to get it down in one big

gush."

"Let's see what we've got here."

She ate and she read, read and ate. He took her back to the very beginning, to the night she'd driven through a storm to Warrior's Peak. He made her see it again, feel it again. That and all that had happened since.

That was his gift, she realized. His art.

He told it like a story, each character vivid and true,

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE ess

each action ringing clear, so that when you came to the end, you wanted more.

"Flynn was right," she said as she turned the last page over. "It helps to see it like

this in my head. I need to absorb it, read it again. But it puts everything that's

happened on one winding path instead of having a lot of offshoots that just happen

to run into each other."

"I'm going to have to write it."

"I thought you just did," she replied, shaking her head.

"No, that's only part of it. Half of it at best. I realized today when I was putting it

all down that I'm going to have to write it when it's all done, turn it into a book. Do

you have any problem with that?"

"I don't know." She smoothed her fingers over the pages. "I guess not, but it feels a

little strange. I've never been in a book before."

He started to speak, then stopped himself and polished off his eggs. She hadn't

been in a book she'd read before, he thought. Which, when it came down to it,

amounted to the same thing.

Chapter Fifteen

*T OOK/ Kane said, "how you betrav. yourself in

is it too looking down at the bed where she and Jordan slept. On the floor beside

them, Moe twitched and made excited sounds.

"What did you do to Moe?"

"I gave him a dream, a harmless, happy dream. He chases rabbits on a sunny

spring day. It will keep him safe and occupied, as we have much to talk about, you

and I.

She watched Moe's back right leg swing as **** running. "I don't have much to

say to anyone who sneaks into my bedroom at night to play Peeping Tom.

"I don't peep, I watch. You interest me, Dana. You have intelligence I respect that.

Scholars are valued in my world. And there we have the scholar^and

<he bard" He gestured toward the bed at her and Jordan One would think a fine

combination. But we know better.

It both frightened and fascinated her to see the couple

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE £35

on the bed, wrapped together in a tangle of limbs. "You don't know us. You never

will. That's why we'll beat you."

He only smiled. The dark suited him, cloaked him like velvet and silk and left his

eyes burning bright. "You search, but you don't find. How can you?

Your life is

pretense, Dana, a dream as much as this. Look how you cling to him in sleep. You,

a strong, intelligent woman, one who considers herself independent, even willful.

Yet you throw yourself at a man who tossed you aside once and will do so again.

You allow yourself to be ruled by passion, and it makes you weak."
"What rules you if not passion?" she countered. "Ambition, greed, hate, vanity.

They're all passions."

"Ah, this is why I enjoy you. We could have such interesting conversations. No, passions are not owned by the mortal world. But to invite pain merely for love and

the pleasures of the flesh." He shook his head. "You were wiser when you hated

him. Now you let him use you again."

He lies. He lies. She couldn't let herself fall into the trap of that seductive voice

and forget how it lied. "Nobody uses me. Not even you."

"Perhaps you need to remember more clearly."

It was snowing. She felt the flakes-soft, cold, wet, on her skin, though she couldn't

see them fall. They seemed to hang suspended in the air.

She felt the bite of the wind but couldn't hear it, nor did it chill her.

The world was a black-and-white photograph. Black trees, white snow.

White

mountains rising toward a white sky, and there, far up, the black silhouette of

Warrior's Peak.

All was still and cold and silent.

There was a man all the way down the block, frozen in the act of shoveling his

walk. His shovel was lifted, and the scoop of snow was caught in its flight through

the air."

£36

NORA ROBERTS

"Do you know this place?" Kane asked her.

"Yes." Three blocks south of Market, two blocks west of Pine Ridge.

"And this house."

The tiny two-story box, painted white with black shutters. The two small dormer windows of the second floor, one for each small bedroom. The single dogwood, with snow adorning its thin branches, and the narrow driveway that ran beside it.

Two cars in the driveway. The old station wagon and the secondhand Mustang.

"It's Jordan's house." Her mouth was dry. Her tongue felt thick and clumsy. "It's ... it was Jordan's house."

"Is," Kane corrected. "In this frozen moment."

"Why am I here?"

He stepped around her, but left no mark, no print, in the snow. The hem of his

black robe seemed to float just an inch above that white surface.

He wore a ruby, a large round cabochon on a chain that fell nearly to his waist. In

the black-and-white world it shone there like a fat drop of fresh blood.

"I give you the courtesy of allowing you to know this is memory, of letting you

stand with me and observe. Do you understand this?"

"I understand this is memory."

"With the first of you, I showed her what could be. So I showed you. But I realize

you are a more ... earthbound creation. One who prefers reality. But are you brave

enough to see what is real?"

"To see what?" But she already knew.

Color seeped into the world. The deep green of pines beneath the draping snow,

the bright blue mailbox on the corner, the blues and greens and reds of the coats

the children wore as they built snowmen and forts in the yards.

And with the color came the movement. The snow fell again, and the shovelful

from the walk on the corner

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

Z37

landed with a thump, even as the man bent to scoop up another. She heard the

shouts, high and pure in the air, from the children playing, and the unmistakable

thwack of snowballs striking their targets.

She saw herself, bundled in a quilted jacket the color of blueberries.

What had she

been thinking? She looked like Violet in Charlie and the Chocolate Factory.

A knit cap was pulled over her head, a knit scarf wrapped around her throat. She

moved quickly, but stopped long enough for a brief and energetic snow battle with

the little Dobson boys and their friends.

Her own laughter drifted out to her, and she knew what she'd been thinking, what

she'd been feeling.

She was going to see Jordan, to convince him to come out and play. He was

spending much too much time closed up in that house since his mother died. He

needed to be with someone who loved him.

The past few months had been a nightmare of hospitals and doctors, suffering and

grief. He needed comfort, and a gentle, gentle push back into life. He needed her.

She trooped up the unshoveled walk, stomped her feet. She didn't knock. She'd

never needed to knock on this door.

"Jordan!" She pulled off her cap, raked her fingers through her hair. She'd worn it shorter then, a chopped-off experiment she hated, and willed, daily, to grow back. She called him again as she unzipped her coat. The house still smelled of Mrs. Hawke, she noted. Not of the lemon wax she'd always used on the furniture, or the coffee she'd habitually had on the stove. But of her sickness. Dana wished she could fling open the windows and whisk the worst of the sorrow and grief away. He came to the top of the stairs. Her heart did a tumble in her chest, as it always did when she saw him. He was so handsome, so tall and straight, and just a little dangerous around the eyes and mouth.

238

NORA ROBERTS

"I thought you'd be at the garage, but when I called Pete said you weren't coming in today." "No, I'm not going in." His voice sounded rusty, as if he'd just gotten up. But it was already two hi the afternoon. There were shadows in his eyes, shadows under them, and they broke her heart. She came to the foot of the stairs, shot him a quick smile. "Why don't you put on a coat? The Dobson kids tried to ambush me on the way over. We can kick their little asses." "I've got stuff to do, Dana." "More important than burying the Dobsons in a hail of snowballs?"

"Yeah. I have to finish packing." "Packing?" She didn't feel alarm, not then, only

confusion. "You're going somewhere?"

"New York." He turned and walked away. "New York?" Still there was no alarm.

Now there was a thrill, and she bounded up the stairs after him with excitement at

her heels. "Is it about your book? Did you hear from that agent?"

She rushed into his bedroom, threw herself on his back. "You heard from the

agent, and you didn't tell me? We have to celebrate. We have to do something

insane. What did he say?" v

"He's interested, that's all."

"Of course he's interested. Jordan, this is wonderful. You're going up to have a

meeting with him? A meeting with a New York literary agent!" She let out a crow

of delight, then noticed the two suitcases, the duffel, the packing crate.

Slowly, with that first trickle of alarm, she slid off his back. "You're taking an

awful lot of stuff for a meeting."

"I'm moving to New York." He didn't turn to her, but tossed another sweater, a

pah- of jeans into one of the open suitcases.

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

239

"I don't understand."

"I put the house up for sale yesterday. They probably won't be able to turn it until

spring. Guy at the flea market's going to take most of the furniture and whatever

else there is."

"You're selling the house." When her legs went weak, she sank onto the side of the

bed. "But, Jordan, you live here."

"Not anymore."

"But... you can't just pack up and go to New York. I know you talked about

moving there eventually, but-"

"I'm done here. There's nothing for me here."

It was like having a fist punched into her heart. "How can you say that?

How can

you say there's nothing for you here? I know, Jordan, I know how hard it was for

you to lose your mother. I know you're still grieving. This isn't the time for you to

make this kind of a decision."

"It's already made." He glanced in her direction, but his eyes never met hers. "I've

got a few more things to deal with, then I'm gone. I'm leaving in the morning."

"Just like that?" Pride pushed her back on her feet. "Were you planning on letting

me in on it, or were you just going to send me a postcard when you got there?"

He looked at her now, but she couldn't see into his eyes, couldn't see through the

shield he'd thrown up between them. "I was going to come by later tonight and see

you, and Flynn."

"That's very considerate."

He raked his "fingers through his hair, a gesture she knew reflected impatience or

frustration. "Look, Dana, this is something I have to do."

"No, this is something you want to do, because you're done with this place now.

And everyone in it."

She had to keep her voice low, very low. Or it would shrill. Or scream.

"That

would include me. So I guess the past couple of years haven't meant a damn thing."

"That's bullshit, and you know it." He slapped one suitcase

240

NORA ROBERTS

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

2+1

closed, fastened it. "I care about you, I always did. I'm doing what I need to

do-what I want to do. Either way it comes to the same thing. I can't write here. I

can't rucking think here. And I have to write. I've got a chance to make something

of myself, and I'm taking it. So would you."

"Yeah, you're making something of yourself. A selfish bastard. You've been

planning this, stringing me along while you planned to dump me when it was most

convenient for you."

"This isn't about you, this is about me getting out of this fucking house, out of this

goddamn town." He rounded on her, and the shield cracked enough for her to see

fury. "This is about me not busting my ass every goddamn day working in a grease

pit just to pay the bills, then trying to carve out a few hours to write.

This is about

my life." "I thought I was part of your life." "Christ," He dragged a hand through

his hair again before yanking open a drawer for more clothes.

He couldn't be bothered to stop packing, she thought, not even when he was

breaking her heart.

"You are part of my life. You, Flynn, Brad. How the hell does me moving to New York change that?"

"As far as I know you haven't been sleeping with Flynn and Brad." "

"I can't bury myself in the Valley because you and I had the hots for each other."

"You son of a bitch." She could feel herself beginning to shake, and the stinging tears gathering in her throat. Using all her strength, she channeled the hurt into

rage. "You can make it cheap. You can make yourself cheap. But you won't make me cheap."

He stopped now, stopped packing and turned to look at her with regret, and what

might have been pity. "Dana. I didn't mean it that way."

"Don't." She slapped his hand away when he reached

"-----_ U^T./IC, nn mp nffain.

You're done with the Valley? You're done with me? Fine, that's fine, because I'm

done with you. You'll be lucky to last a month in New York, hacking away at that

crap you write. So when you come crawling back here, don't call me.

Don't speak

to me. Because you're right about one thing, Hawke-there's nothing for you here anymore."

She shoved past him and fled.

She'd forgotten her hat, she realized as she watched herself run out of the house. A

snowball winged by one of the Dobson boys splatted in the middle of her back, but

she didn't notice.

She didn't feel the cold, or the tears streaming down her

face.

She felt nothing. He'd made her nothing.

How could she have forgotten? How could she have forgiven?

She didn't see then, nor did she see now, that he'd stood in the narrow window of

the dormer and watched her go.

SHE woke to thin autumn sunlight, her cheeks wet, her skin chilled.

The grief was so real, so fresh, she rolled away, curled up in a ball and prayed for

it to pass.

She couldn't, wouldn't, go through this again. Had she worked so hard to get over

him, to push herself out of the grief and misery and hurt only to lay herself open to

it all

again?

Was she that weak, that stupid?

Maybe she was, when it came to Jordan. Maybe she was just that weak and stupid.

But she didn't have to be.

She eased out of bed and left him sleeping. She pulled on a robe, a kind of armor,

then headed to the kitchen for coffee.

Moe scrambled up from the foot of the bed and

242

NORA ROBERTS

bounded after her. With his leash between his teeth, he danced in place in the

kitchen.

"Not yet, Moe." She bent to bury her face in his fur. "I'm not up to it yet."

Sensing trouble, he whined, then dropped the leash to lick her face.

"You're a good dog, aren't you? Been chasing rabbits, huh? That's okay, I've been chasing something, too. Neither one of us is ever going to catch it." She drank the coffee where she stood, and was pouring a second cup when she heard Jordan's footsteps. He'd pulled on his clothes, but still looked sleepily rumpled. He grunted when Moe's paws hit his chest, and managed to nip the coffee mug out of Dana's hand. He drank deep. "Thanks." He handed it back, then stooped to pick up Moe's leash. The act had Moe running around them in desperate circles. "Want me to take him out?" "Yes. You can take him back to Flynn's." f "Sure. Want to go for a run before breakfast?" he said to Moe as he clipped on the leash. "Yeah, you bet." "I don't want you to come back here." "Hmm?" He glanced up, saw her face. "What did you say?" "I don't want you to come back here. Not this morning, not ever." "Down, Moe." Something in the quiet tone had the dog obeying. "Did I sleep through an argument, or... Kane," he said and gripped Dana's arm. "What did he do?" "It has nothing to do with him. It's about me this time. I made a mistake letting you back in. I'm correcting it." "What the hell brought this on? Last night-" "We have great sex." She shrugged, sipped her coffee. "That's not enough for me. Or maybe it's too much for me. Either way it doesn't work. You ripped me to

pieces once."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

243

"Dana, let me-"

"No, that's just it." She stepped back from him. "I won't let you, not again. I've got

a good life, all in all. It satisfies me. I don't want you in it. I don't want you here,

Jordan. I can't have you here. So I'm telling you to go while there are no hard

feelings. I'm telling you while we still have some chance of being friends."

She moved past him quickly. "I'm going to shower. Don't be here when I come out."

H E was still in a daze when he walked into Flynn's. Was this what she'd felt like?

he wondered. Was this what he'd done to her? Had he left her feeling hollowed out and numb?

And what happened when the numbness passed? Was it pain, or anger, or both?

He wanted the anger. Christ, he wanted to find his anger.

Trailing the leash that Jordan forgot to unclip, Moe dashed back toward the

kitchen, and Flynn's cheerful greeting followed the sound of thumps.

"A boy and his dog." Malory jogged down the stairs, morning fresh in khakis and a

navy sweatshirt. "You're back early this morning," she began, "or I'm running

behind." Then she stopped, stared at him. "What is it? What's wrong?" A bubble of

fear came into her voice. "Dana-"

"No, nothing. She's fine."

"But you're not. Come on. Let's go sit down."

"No, I need to-"

"Sit down," she repeated, and taking his arm, pulled him toward the kitchen.

Flynn was at the card table, a temporary measure in the evolving kitchen. The

walls had been painted a strong teal blue that set off the golden wood of the new

cabinets. The floor was stripped down in preparation for the hardwood
244

NORA ROBERTS

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

245

Malory had selected. A piece of plywood sat on a stretch of base cabinets as a makeshift countertop.

Flynn was eating cereal, and from the guilty look on both his and his dog's faces,

he'd been sharing it with Moe.

"Hey, what's up? You want food, you've got about fifteen minutes before the crew gets here."

"Sit down, Jordan. I'll get you some coffee."

Flynn studied his friend's face. "What's the deal? You and Dana have a fight?"

"No, no fight. She just told me to go."

"Go where?"

"Flynn." Malory set a mug of coffee in front of Jordan and laid a hand on his

shoulder. "Can you possibly be that dense?"

"Well, Jesus, give me a minute to catch up. If you weren't fighting, why did she kick you out?"

"Because she didn't want me there."

"So you just left?" Flynn tossed out. "Without finding out what pissed her off?"

"She wasn't mad. If she'd been mad I could've handled her. Handled it.

She just

looked... tired, and sad. And finished." He rubbed his hands over his face,. So it

wasn't going to be anger after all, he realized. It was just pain.

"Whatever she felt, Jordan, whatever's behind it, you have to find out."

Malory

gave his shoulder a quick shake. "Doesn't she mean anything to you?"

He shot her a look storming with emotions, and with a sigh she moved in to wrap

her arms around him. "All right, then," she murmured. "All right."

"She means enough," he managed, "that I'm not going to put that look on her face

again. She wants me gone, I'll go."

"Men are such morons. Haven't you considered that she wants you gone only

because she already expects you to go?"

ZOE met Malory at the front door, then nudged her back out. "I've been watching

for you. Dana's in there, painting your side. Something's wrong. I can see it. But

she won't talk about it."

"She broke up with Jordan."

"Oh. If they've had a fight-"

"No, it's something else, and nothing as simple as an argument. I'm going to see

what I can do."

"Good luck." Zoe went back hi.

"What's that noise, anyway?"

"Just one more complication. Bradley's over hi Dana's section with an electric floor

sander. He won't let me use it. Yes, it was very nice of him to lend it to us," she

continued when Malory lifted her eyebrows. "But I'm perfectly capable of sanding

the floors. With him here, it's that much harder to get Dana to open up."

"Keep him busy, I'll deal with Dana."

"I don't want to keep him busy. The last time I was alone with him for ten minutes,

he put the moves on me."

"Which moves?"

Zoe glanced over her shoulder toward the sound of the sander. "The night we were

at his place, after everyone else left. I was having a simple conversation with him,

then he kissed me."

"He kissed you? That perverted maniac! Get the rope."

"Oh, ha, ha."

"Okay, did you have to fight him off? Was it a scarring experience?"

"No, but..." She lowered her voice, though she could have shouted and not been

overheard. "He really kissed me, and my head went wonky for a minute, so I

kissed him back. I've got entirely too much on my plate for fun and games right

now. Besides, he makes me nervous."

"Yeah, great-looking guys who take time out of their day to sand floors for me

always make me nervous. Listen, I've got to talk to Dana. When I've taken care of

her, I'll run over

446 NORA ROBERTS

and, if necessary, save you from Brad's nefarious clutches. Unless, of course, you

don't think you can handle yourself." "Okay, that was low. Very low."

"Just make

sure he doesn't wander over while I'm talking to Dana. Scoot." She waved Zoe

away, then headed in the opposite direction.

Her first thought was: Oh! Her walls were coming to life with that pale, delicate burnt gold she'd chosen. It was right, just so right. Already she could see what a perfect backdrop it would make for art.

Her second thought was how set and blank Dana's face was as she worked.

And that was wrong, just so wrong. "It looks wonderful."

Obviously jolted out of long thoughts, Dana turned her head. "Yeah. You've got a knack for bull's-eyeing color. I figured this would look bland, even a little dingy. Instead it has this nice, quiet glow."

"You don't. You don't have any glow at all today." Dana shrugged, and continued to work. "Can't be Mary Sunshine all the time."

"I saw Jordan this morning. He wasn't glowing either. In fact," she continued as she walked to Dana, "he looked devastated."

"He'll get over it."

"Do you really think that, or do you need to think it because it gets you off the hook?"

"I'm not on any hook." She stared hard at the wall as she painted. Gold over white, gold over white. "I did what was right for me. It's none of your business, Malory."

"Yes, it is. I love you. I love Flynn, and he loves you."

"We're just one big, gooey family."

"You can be angry with me if you want, if it helps. But you have to know I'm on your side. Whatever happens, I'm on your side."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

"Then you should understand why I broke things off and you should support my decision."

"I would, if I thought it was what you really wanted." Malory rubbed a hand over

Dana's back. "If it made you happy."

"I'm not looking for happy yet." Her friend's comforting stroke made her want to

sit down on the floor and wail. "I'll settle for a little stretch of smooth road."

"Tell me what happened between yesterday and today."

"I remembered-with a little help from Kane."

"I knew it." As she snapped it out, Malory's face went bright with anger.

"I knew

he was behind this."

"Hold on. He took me on a trip down memory lane. That makes him a son of a

bitch, but it doesn't change the facts." God, she was tired. She just wanted to be

left alone to paint the walls. Paint away the ache and fatigue. "He didn't change

what happened or make it worse. He didn't have to. I just knew that after seeing it

again, feeling it again, I was making a mistake."

"Why is it a mistake to love a decent man?"

"Because he doesn't love me." She yanked the band out of her hair, as if doing so

would relieve the headache simmering at the base of her skull. "Because he's going

to leave as soon as he's done here. Because the more I'm with him, the deeper in I

get, and I can't control how I feel the way I thought I could. I can't be with him and

not be in love with him."

"Did you ask how he felt?"

"No. And you know what? I just wasn't up to hearing the old 'I care about you' routine. Sue me."

No one spoke for a moment. There was only the sound of Dana's labored breathing, the hum of the paint machine, and the steady buzz of the sander from the other side of the house.

"You hurt him." Malory stepped over, flicked off the machine. "Maybe his feelings aren't as simple and weak

248 NORA ROBERTS

as you think. The man I saw this morning had been cut straight down to the bone.

If you wanted payback, Dana, you got it."

She whirled around, vibrant with fury, trembling with insult. The roller fell out of her hand and left a dull gold smear on the drop cloth. "For Christ's sake, what do

you take me for? Do you think I've been sleeping with him just so I could kick him

out and get back some of my own?"

"No, I don't. I'm just thinking, if you really want that smooth stretch of road, you

don't get it by running some^' body else into a ditch, then leaving him there

bleeding."

Dana heaved the hair band to the floor and wished viciously she had something

more satisfying to throw. "You've got some goddamn nerve."

"Yes, I guess I do."

"This is my fucking spin on the wheel, Malory. I don't need you or anyone else

telling me who to let into my life, or who to close out."

"Seems to me that's just what you're letting Kane do. He had a direction he wanted you to take, and ypu're going right along with it. You're not even asking yourself why he gave you the push."

"So now I should stay with Jordan because of the key? You're lecturing me about my own life, my own decisions, so I won't risk screwing up your deal?" Malory drew a long breath. It wasn't the time for her to lose her temper, or, she decided, to blame Dana for losing hers. "If you believe that, you don't know me, and more, you don't know what it is you've agreed to do. So you can keep on painting, and congratulating yourself for avoiding all those bumps in the road, or you can stop being a coward and settle this with Jordan." Finished, Malory started out. "He shouldn't be hard to find," she called back. "He told Flynn he was going to see his mother this morning."

Onapter Sixteen

E brought her carnations. Tulips had been her * favorite, but it was the wrong season. Still, she'd liked simple flowers the best. Tulips and daffodils, rambling roses and daisies. The carnations were simple, it seemed to him, and feminine in a soft, old-fashioned pink. She'd have appreciated them, made a fuss, and put them in her good vase-the one her mother had given her some long ago Christmas. He hadn't thought to buy anything to put them in, so the florist's paper would have to do.

He hated the cemetery. All those stones and markers popping out of the ground like a crop of death in gray and white and black. All the names and dates inscribed on them were as much a reminder that no one beat fate in the end as a memorial to a lifetime.

Morbid thoughts, he supposed, but this was the place for them.

The grass was bumpy and weedy, so the green was

250 NORA ROBERTS

marred with brown patches where it had worn away, spindly where it hadn't been

clipped close enough to the stones. Others had brought flowers to their dead, and

some of the offerings were faded and withered. Some solved this remembrance of

death by laying artificial blooms at the markers, but the bright colors struck him as

false.

More lie, he thought, than tribute.

It was too windy here on the north end, and too cold, without the shelter of the

small grove of trees to the east or , the sunny rise just to the west.

He'd had the marker replaced a few years before with smooth white granite. She'd

have considered that a foolish expense, but he'd needed to do something.

It held her name. Susan Lee Hawke. And the span of her life, that short forty-six

years. Beneath, in script, was the line he'd paraphrased from Emily Dickinson.

Hope perches in the soul

She'd never lost hope. She'd lived her life believing in the power of hope, and

faith, leavened with good, hard work. Even when the sickness had eaten away her

beauty, had whittled her down to brittle bones she'd had hope.
For him, Jordan thought now. She'd had hope for him, believed in him,
and had
loved him without qualification.
He crouched down to lay the flowers on her grave.
"I miss you, Mom. I miss talking to you, and hearing you laugh. I miss
seeing that
look in your eye that told me I was in trouble. And even when I was, you
were
there for me. You were always there for me."
He stared at the words on the stone. It looked so formal. She'd always
been Sue.
Simple, straightforward Sue.
"I know you're not in there. This sort of thing, it's just a way of letting
other people
know you were around, that you were loved. Sometimes I feel you, and
it's such a
strong feeling it's as if I could turn around and there you'd

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

251

be. You always believed in stuff like that, in the possibilities of what we
are."
He rose, slid his hands into his pockets. "I'm wondering what the hell I
am. I've
screwed up. Not everything, just one vital thing. I've got the one thing I
always
wanted, and I lost the one thing I didn't know I always needed. I'd say
maybe it's
cosmic justice. Maybe you just can't have it all. But you'd give me that
look."
He gazed out toward the hills she'd always loved, and the way the sky
held a
strong blue over the flame of the trees. "I don't know if I can fix it. Fact
is, I don't
know if I should even try." ,

He closed his eyes a moment. "It hurts to be here. I guess it's supposed to." He

touched his fingers to his lips, then pressed his fingers to the stone. "I love you. I'll come back."

He turned, and stopped when he saw Dana standing on the edge of the access

road, watching him.

He looked so sad, she thought. More than that, it was as if the sorrow had stripped

away his defenses and left the emotions behind them open and raw. It was painful

to see him this vulnerable, to understand that they both knew she'd caught him

unguarded in a moment meant to be private.

No longer sure what she would say, could say, she walked across the grass to

stand with him by his mother's grave.

"I'm sorry. I didn't want to ... disturb you," she began. "That's why I was waiting

over there."

"It's all right."

She looked down at the grave, the fresh flowers spread over the grass.

Perhaps she

did know what to say. "Flynn and I come here once a year." She cleared her throat.

"His father, my mother ... and yours. We, ah, try to come right after the first real

snowfall. Everything's so peaceful and white and clean. We bring her flowers."

She shifted her gaze from the flowers and saw he was staring at her. "I thought

you'd like to know we always bring her flowers when we come."

252

NORA ROBERTS

He didn't speak, but his eyes said everything. Then he simply lowered his forehead to hers.

They stood like that, silent, while the wind whipped around them and fluttered the petals of the pink carnations.

"Thanks." He straightened slowly, as if he were afraid something in him might

break. "Thank you."

She nodded, and they stood, silent again, looking out at the hills.

"This is the first time I've been out here since I've been back," he told her. "I never

know what I'm supposed to do-in a place like this."

"You did it. Carnations are nice. Simple." He let out a little laugh.

"Yeah, that was

my thought. Why are you here, Dana?"

"I had things to say to you, that maybe I didn't say the right way this morning."

"If it's along the lines of we can still be friends, maybe you could wait a couple of

days on that."

"Not exactly. I don't know if this is the appropriate time or place to talk about

this," she began, "but after Malory finished reaming me out this morning, I

decided she had a few points, and that I owed you-myself-I owed both of us

something better than the way I ended things."

"I hurt you. I could see it on your face. I don't want to hurt you, Dana."

"Too late for that." She lifted her shoulders, let them fall. "You were careless with

me, Jordan. You were careless and you were callous. And though I might have

spent some happy hours over the years dreaming about paying you back in kind, I realize that's not really what I want. So my being careless and callous with you this morning wasn't any more satisfying for me than it was for you." "Why did you do it?"

"I went back last night, courtesy of Kane." She frowned up at his pithy comment.

"I don't think you should use that sort of language over your mother's grave."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE 253

For some reason, the remark loosened a knot in his belly. "She's heard it before."

"Nevertheless."

He, shrugged, and there was something of the boy she'd loved in the gesture. Just

enough of him to twist her heart again. "Where did you go?"

"I went back to the day you were packing to move to New York. I experienced it

again. Watched my self experiencing it. It was very strange, and no less horrible

knowing I was watching a rerun. It was like standing on both sides of a one-way

mirror. Watching us, and still being a part of it. Everything you said to me,

everything you didn't say to me, was just as painful as when it happened."

"I'm sorry."

She tipped her face up to his, "I actually believe you are, which is why I'm here

rather than burning you in effigy. But you see, it hurt, all over again.

And I have

the right, I have the responsibility to myself, to step back from that. I'm not willing

to let my heart spill at your feet again, and I can't be with you and keep it intact.

Maybe we can be friends, maybe we can't. But we can't be lovers. I just needed to explain that to you."

When she stepped back, he laid a hand on her arm. "Would you walk with me?"

"Jordan-

"Just walk with me for a few minutes. You said what you had to say. I'm asking you to listen."

"All right." She put her hands in her pockets to warm them, and to avoid contact with his.

"I didn't handle it well when my mother died."

"I don't know that you're supposed to handle things like that well. My mother's buried over there." She lifted a hand to gesture. "I don't really remember her. I

don't remember losing her. But I miss her, and sometimes still I feel cheated. I

have some of her things-a blouse my father saved that was her favorite, some of her jewelry, and photographs.

254

NORA ROBERTS

I like having them. The fact that I don't remember her, that I was too young to remember losing her, doesn't mean I don't understand what it was like for you.

You wouldn't let me help."

"You're right. I wouldn't let you help. I didn't know how." He took her arm briefly

to steady her over the uneven ground, then let her go as they walked toward the trees.

"I loved her so much, Dana. It's not the sort of thing you think about every day

when things are normal. I mean I didn't wake up every morning thinking, boy, I

sure love my mother. But we were a unit." "I know."

"When my father left us ... well, I don't remember him very well either. But I

remember that she was a rock. Not cold, not hard, just sturdy. She worked like a

fucking dog, two jobs until we were out of the debt pit he'd put her in."

Even now,

he could almost taste the bitterness of it. "She must've been so tired, but she

always had time for me. Not just putting a meal on the table or handing me a clean

shirt, but for me." *

"I know. She was so interested in everything you did, without breathing down

your neck over it. I used to pretend she was my mother."

He glanced down. "You did?"

"Yeah. You didn't think I was hanging around your house when I was a kid just to

annoy you and Flynn and Brad, did you? I liked being around her. She smelled like

a mother, and she laughed a lot. She'd look at you-sometimes she'd just look over

at you, and there was such love in her face, such pride. I wanted a mother who

would look at me

that way."

It moved him to hear her say it, and the faint tang of bitterness washed away. "She

never let me down. Not once. Not ever. She read everything I wrote,
even when I
was a kid. She saved a lot of it, and she would tell me that one day,
when I was a

famous writer, people would get a big

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

255

kick out of reading my early stories. I don't know if I would be a writer
today if it

wasn't for her. Her steady, constant faith in me."

"She'd be thrilled with what you've done."

"She didn't live to see me published, not with a book. She wanted me to
go to

college. I wanted it, too, but I figured on putting it off a year or two,
earning more

money first. She laid down the law-and she was damn good at that when
it was

important to her. So I went."

He was silent for a moment, and a cloud slipped over the sun, deadening
the light.

"I sent some money home, but not much. Wasn't that much to spare. I
didn't come

home as much as I should have. I got caught up. There was so much out
there.

Then I went to grad school. There were a lot of years I wasn't there for
her."

"You're being too hard on yourself."

"Am I? She put me first, every time. I could've come back here sooner,
earned a

good living at the garage and taken some of the weight off her."

She put a hand on his shoulder so he would turn and face her. "That's not
what she

wanted for you. You know it wasn't. She was over the moon about what
you were

doing. When you had those stories published in magazines, she was thrilled."

"I could've written them here. I did write when I finally came home. I got my teeth into a book, wrote like a crazy man at night after work. When I wasn't being crazy over you, that is. I was going to do it all, have it all. Money, fame, the works."

He spoke quickly now, as if the words had been dammed up too long. "I was going to move her out of that broken-down house, buy her someplace beautiful, up in the hills. She would never have to work again. She could garden or read, or whatever she wanted to do. I was going to take care of her. But I didn't. I couldn't."

"Oh, Jordan. You're not to blame for that."

256

NORA ROBERTS

"It's not a matter of blame. She got sick. I'd spent all that time away, now I was back, going to make it right. And she got sick. Just a little tired, she'd say. Just a little achy. Getting old. And she'd laugh. So she didn't go to the doctor in time.

Money was tight, time off work was tough to get, so she didn't go until it was too late."

Unable to hold out against it, she took his hand in hers. "It was terrible. What both of you went through was terrible."

"I didn't pay attention, Dana. I was wrapped up in my own life, in what I wanted, what I needed. I didn't see that she was sick until she ... Jesus, she sat me down

and told me what they'd found inside her."

"It's stupid to blame yourself for that. Stupid, Jordan, and she'd tell you exactly that."

"She probably would, and I've come around to that since. But during it, after... It

happened so fast. I know it took months, but it seemed so fast. The doctors, the hospital, the surgery, the chemo. Christ, she was so sick through that. I didn't

know how to take care of her-"

"Wait. Just wait. You did take care of her. "You stayed with her, you read to her.

God, Jordan, you fed her when she couldn't feed herself. You were her rock then,

Jordan. I saw it."

"Dana, I was terrified, and I was angry, and I couldn't tell her. I locked it in

because I didn't know what else to do."

"You were barely in your twenties, and your world was crashing down around

you."

Even as she said it, she knew she hadn't understood that at the time, not completely.

"She was fading away in front of me, and I couldn't stop it. When we knew she

was dying, when there wasn't much time-she was in such pain-she told me she was

sorry she had to go, that she had to leave me. She said there wasn't a single day of

my life she hadn't been proud of me, and grateful for me.

"I fell apart. I just lost it. Then she was gone. I don't

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE 257

know if I said good-bye, or told her I love'd her. I don't even know what I said or

did."

He turned back, walking once more toward the stones that bloomed out of the patchy grass. "She'd made all the arrangements already, so all I had to do was follow through. One foot in front of the other. The memorial service-the dress she wanted to wear, the music she wanted played. She had some insurance. She'd scraped money together for that every month. Christ knows how. There was enough to pay off most of the debts that had built up and give me some breathing room."

"You were her child. She wanted to provide for you." "She did, in every possible way. I couldn't stay here, Dana. Not then. I couldn't live in that house and grieve for her every time I took a breath. I couldn't stay in this town, where I would see people I knew everywhere I went.

"You'd think it would be a comfort, the familiar. But for me it was constant pain.

One minute I'd feel like I was suffocating, the next like I was going to explode. I had to get away from it. I had to bury some of that pain the way. I'd buried her."

"You wouldn't talk to me about it." "I couldn't. If I'd had the words, I'd have choked on them. I'm not saying it was right. It wasn't. But it's the truth. I had to make something of myself, and I couldn't do it here. Or I believed I couldn't, so what's the difference?" "You had to go," she murmured, "or you wouldn't be who

you are." How could it have taken her so long to see that?
"I hated what I was here, and I was afraid of what I would become if I
stayed. I
saw myself working in the garage day after day, year after year, and
throwing
away everything she'd worked for, everything she'd wanted for me
because I
couldn't do any better. I was angry and in pain, so wrapped up in both I
didn't give
a damn about anything else."

He came back to the edge of his mother's grave, stared down at the
flowers. "I

didn't know you loved me. I don't

258

NORA ROBERTS

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

259

know what I'd have done differently if I had, but I didn't
know. You always seemed so strong, so sure of yourself, so
easy with the way things were, that I didn't see inside that."

He reached out to brush the hair back from her cheek,
then dropped his hand again. "Maybe I didn't want to.

With all that happened to her, I didn't have any room to
love anyone. But I hurt you, and I meant to. Because it was
easier on me if you walked away. I'm ashamed of that, and
I'm sorry for it. You deserved better."

"I don't know what to say to you. It helps, hearing all this. I know it
wasn't easy to

tell me." "Don't cry, Dana. It rips me."

"It's a little tough to get through otherwise." But she swiped her fingers
under her

eyes. "We were young, Jordan, and we both made mistakes. We can't
change what

happened, but we can put it in place and try to be friends
again."

"We're grown up now, and we've got today to deal with.
You want to be friends, I'll be your friend."

"Okay." She managed a wobbly smile and* held out a
hand.

"There's just one more thing you need to know." He clasped her fingers
firmly hi

his. "I'm in love with you." "Oh." Her already unsteady heart stumbled.

"God." "I

never got over you. Whatever I felt for you back then, it was like the
root. Time

went on, I'd keep trying to kill that root, but it wouldn't die. I'd breeze
back into

town to see Flynn, catch a glimpse of you, or you'd take a shot at me,
and what

was growing on that root would nudge a little further up from the
ground." "Damn

it, Jordan. Damn it."

Whatever it cost him, he had to get it out. "This last time, when I
knocked on

Flynn's door and you opened it, it was like that vine shot up another ten
feet and

wrapped around my throat. I'm in love with you, Dana. I can't kill it off,
and I

wouldn't if I could. So, I'm spilling my heart at

your feet this time. It's yours, whatever you do with it." "What do you
think I'm

going to do, you jackass?" She

leaped into his arms.

Relief, joy, pleasure rushed through him like a flood as

he buried his face in her hair. 'That's what I was hoping
you'd say.'

THE first thing Dana heard when she walked back into Indulgence was
arguing.

Just one of the essential elements, in her opinion, that made a house a
home. She

cocked an ear toward her section of the building, and held up a hand for quiet

when Jordan stepped in behind her.

"I'm not going to hurt myself. I'm perfectly capable of running an electric sander.

You just don't want anyone else to play with it."

"In the first place, it's not a toy." There was such chilly exasperation in Brad's

voice that Dana had to muffle a snort. "In the second, once I've finished this

area-which I would already have done if you didn't keep nagging-"

"I don't nag." There were equal parts venom and insult in Zoe's response. Dana gave Jordan's arm a tug. "You go referee the Irritable Twins," she whispered.

"I need to talk to Malory."

"Why can't I talk to Malory?"

"A real man wouldn't be afraid to-"

"Oh, stop that." He hunched his shoulders, jammed his hands in his pockets, and

strode off in the direction of the spat.

Dana buffed her nails on her jacket. "Works every time." Then she huffed out a

breath, squared her own shoulders, and headed in the opposite direction to

swallow her serving of crow.

The walls in what would be Malory's main showroom were finished.

And looked,

Dana decided, just swell. She could hear the music from the radio jingling out

from the

2<So NORA ROBERTS

room beyond, and Malory's singing along with Bonnie Raitt.

She was also, Dana noted as she stepped in, grooving. As Malory swiped the roller

up and down, her hips bumped to the jumpy Delta beat.

"You got that up so loud just to keep up your rhythm, or to block out the sexual tension from across the hall?"

Malory turned, set down her roller to give her arms a rest. "A little of both. How're you doing?"

"How do I look?"

"Better." Malory took a closer study. "In fact, you look pretty damn good."

"I feel pretty damn good. First, I'm sorry. I was feeling miserable and I took it out

on you. You were only trying to help."

"Friends do that. Take their moods out on each other, and try to help.

Both of you

looked so unhappy, Dana."

"Well, we were. We had reason to be. Whatever Kane's motives, he showed me the

truth. I couldn't just bury what happened before, all that hurt. It had to be dealt

with, taken out, looked at. Understood, at least." >

"You're right."

"No, you were right." She peeled off her jacket, tossed it on the window ledge. "I

wasn't dealing with it, not by starting things up with Jordan again, or cutting them

off. I just had it buried in a very shallow grave. We both did."

"You needed time together first, to get to know each other again."

"You're right. You're batting a thousand today."

"Though I've never understood exactly what that means, let me see if I can keep it

up. You went to see Jordan, you talked some of this out, and you reached the

understanding, at last, that you're in love with each other."

"Sign her up. He loves me." When Dana's eyes filled, Malory whipped the kerchief

off her head and rushed over to offer it. "Thanks. He said things to me he didn't

say before. Couldn't say, or wouldn't. I don't guess it matters.

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

2(51

He wasn't ready, and if I'm going to be honest about it, we weren't ready. I loved

him, but that wasn't enough to let me see what he was going through, what he

needed. What I needed, for that matter. It was blinding, so all I could see was 'I

want Jordan.' Period. I never thought about what we'd do together, or be together,

what either of us needed to do separately to make it strong. It was all just right that

minute."

"You were young, and in love." Malory took the kerchief back and dried her own

eyes.

"Yeah, I was. I loved him with everything I had. But I have more now.

And it's so

amazing, really, to be able to take one step back and look at the man he is, the man

he's made of himself and realize he's more. To know it was worth the wait."

"Dana."

Her damp eyes went wide on Malory's face, then she blinked rapidly before

turning to where Jordan stood in the doorway. "This is girl stuff here."

"Dana." He said her name again, then crossed to her. She saw the emotion swirling

in his eyes, blazing in the blue before his arms banded around her. He hitched her

up to her toes as his mouth swooped down to hers.

"Oh." Undone, Malory buried her face in the kerchief.

"Okay, I'd just like to say-" Zoe stormed halfway into the room before she skidded to a halt. Staring at the couple wrapped in each other, she pressed a hand to her heart. "Oh." She reached back to dig the bandanna out of her pocket, but Brad stepped up beside her, pushed his into her hand.

"Thanks." She sniffled into it. "But I did have my own."

"Shut up, Zoe."

Because the moment was too precious to spoil, she did.

Jordan eased back. "There's something I have to do."

Her eyebrow winged up, and her smile was quick and wicked. "Right here? In

front of all our friends?"

"Cool," was Brad's response, which earned him Zoe's elbow in his belly.

"This isn't the time for gutter thoughts."

262

NORA ROBERTS

"It's always the time."

"Ignore them," Jordan murmured and pressed his lips to Dana's forehead.

"I am."

"There's something I have to do," he said again. "So I have to renege on giving you

a hand around here today."

"But-"

"It's important," he interrupted. "I'll explain it tonight."

"We all need to get together tonight and go over what you wrote. I'm running out of time."

"Why don't we meet at Flynn's? It's the most central." He glanced over.

"Is that

okay with you, Malory?"

"Sure. The kitchen's not finished yet, so we won't get food like we did at Brad's."

Actually, even with the kitchen finished we wouldn't get food like we had at Brad's."

"Pizza and beer works for me," Dana said.

"That's my girl." Jordan kissed her again. "I'll see you there."

"You've got something up your sleeve." Dana narrowed her eyes. "I can see it. If

you're thinking about messing with Kane-

"He's got nothing to do with this. I've got to go, or I'm not going to get it all done.

Brad, you're coming with me."

"I haven't finished here."

"You go. Take him," Zoe said, pointing at Brad. "Leave the sander. All will be well here."

"You're not hauling that thing upstairs by yourself."

"It's not that heavy, and I'm not that weak."

"You're not carrying it up those stairs."

"Jesus, Vane, cart the thing up and be done with it." Grinning, Jordan slung his

arm around Dana's shoulder. "Don't you know how to handle a woman?"

"Kiss my ass." Brad turned on his heel and strode away.

"I can do it myself," Zoe began.

"Zoe." Basking in the glow of love rediscovered, Dana shook her head.

"Stop being a jerk."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

£63

"I can't help it." Zoe lifted her hands, let them fall. "He brings out the jerk in me."

She heard him cursing under his breath as he carried the sander toward the steps,

and folded her arms over her chest. "I'm not going to say anything. I'm not going to do anything."

"Good plan. Why don't you grab a roller?" Malory suggested. "We can finish in here, then start upstairs."

"Can I just say you women are doing a hell of a job with this place?"

"There, see?" Delighted, Zoe walked over and gave Jordan a loud kiss on the

cheek. "Here's a secure man who has respect for a woman's abilities."

"Absolutely. Nothing sexier than a self-sufficient woman."

"Lap it up, Hawke, lap it up." Dana nudged him aside. "Now take your playmate

and run along. We've got work to do."

She waited until Jordan and Brad had gone out, then dashed to the window to spy

on them. "What's he up to? Yeah, yeah, Brad's asking him what gives right now. I

can tell. But he's not saying. He's not saying because he knows I'm standing here

watching. Damn it!"

She jerked back with a laugh as Jordan looked straight at her through the glass.

"You just can't pull one over on Jordan. God, I love that about him."

"I'm so happy for you." Malory sighed. "And if we're not careful, we're going to

start another weep-o-rama."

"Since I've leaked more in this one day than I have the entire past year, let's paint."

Dana turned, gave her biceps an exaggerated flex. "He's right, you know. We're

doing a hell of a job with this place."

THEY worked downstairs until the walls were done, then took a coffee break,

sitting on the floor to admire them. . "The floors in Dana's section need to be

damp-mopped. You need a clean surface before they're sealed."

164 -

NORA ROBERTS

"I don't know how the sealing part goes."

"It's easy," Zoe told her. "I'll show you. Once they're sealed, dried good and hard, you can start moving stuff in."

"Wow!" Since Dana's stomach jumped, she pressed a hand to it. "It gets more real

every day. I ordered the shelves. If they get here when they're supposed to, along

with the other stuff I ordered-and the first shipments of books-I should be setting

up in a couple of weeks. Maybe less. And I have a potential employee."

"You didn't say anything about that." Zoe punched her lightly on the arm. "Who is it?"

"It's a woman I met when I was working in the library. I ran into her at the grocery

store, and one thing led to another. She's personable, presentable, likes to read,

wants a job, and isn't looking for a big salary. She's going to come by sometime

and get a look at the place. If she doesn't run screaming, I think I've got myself a

bookseller."

"Zoe, how soon do you think I can start moving stock in?" Malory asked.

"I think next week." Zoe sipped coffee, glanced around the room. "It's all coming

together so well, I don't want to jinx it, but I really think next week. It's going to

take me a • little longer. There's more to set up in a salon. And we still have to

replace some of these windows. Plus there's going to be a good, long list of

punch-out work."

"I love it when she talks the manly talk," Dana commented. "Now let's go up and play with the sander like men."

"First," Zoe said in a fair imitation of Brad's most clipped tone, "it's not a toy."

"Jeez." Dana laughed her way to her feet. "You slay me."

Chapter Seventeen

"f O U sure about this?" Brad studied Jordan, and the 7 square-cut ruby ring in

his hand. "Yeah. I think. She'd like this better than the traditional diamond."

"I don't mean the ring. I mean what you're buying the ring for."

"I'm sure. A little queasy, but sure."

"I'm not going to take offense," Flynn decided. "I could take offense that asking my

sister to marry you makes you queasy, but I won't."

Jordan smiled a little as he turned the ring under the right. He'd wanted them both

with him when he took this step. A kind of circle, he supposed, just as the ring

was a circle. He couldn't say either of them had been thrilled to be hauled off to

Pittsburgh and into a jewelry store, but they'd come through.

They always did.

"I think this is the one. I know she is." He offered the

266

NORA ROBERTS

ring to Brad. "You know more about this stuff than either of us. Give me an

opinion of the rock."

Behind the counter, the jeweler began to make noises.

"Yeah, yeah." Jordan waved him off. "I know the spiel. I'd rather hear what my pal

here has to say."

"I can assure you that stone is an excellent quality. Burmese ruby at three carats, set in eighteen-karat gold. The craftsmanship of the-"

"Why don't you get me a loupe?" Brad suggested pleasantly. "The guy's buying an engagement ring. It's a moment."

He might not have been happy, but the potential sale had him producing a jeweler's loupe and offering it to Brad.

Playing it out, Brad hemmed, hawed, and hummed before setting both the ring and the loupe on the black velvet pad. "You're buying yourself a hell of a rock," he said. "It hits the three C's-color, cut, clarity, and at three substantial carats, rounds it out nicely. She'll love it."

"Yeah, that's what I thought. Wrap it up," he told the jeweler.

"We should go get a beer now, right?" Flynn glanced warily at the other rings in the glass case. "And Jordan should buy, in a symbolic gesture of... oh, heir with all that. I just want a beer."

"All in good time, my pretty." Jordan pulled out his wallet, dug out his credit card.

"We've got another stop to make on the way back."

THE way he looked at it, he was going to make a clean sweep. A kind of romantic hat trick. He got the girl, he'd bought the ring. Now, he thought as they pulled through the gates of Warrior's Peak, he was going to see if he could finesse the house.

"This is wild," Flynn said from the backseat where Moe snored beside him,

exhausted by the thrill of the car trip. "I thjnk I'm in some sort of shock."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

267

"Pretty wild," Jordan agreed. "But the fact is, I always wanted this place. Even

when I was a kid."

"Okay, before you go in there and make some sort of .insane offer, let's just take

one more pass through the routine." Brad shifted. "Let me point out, once again,

that this place is enormous."

"I like big."

"It's isolated."

"I like isolated."

"You haven't asked Dana if she wants to live up here."

"I don't have to. I know how she'll feel about it."

"It's like talking to a brick," Brad muttered. "Okay, if you're set on going through

with this, at least take the Fm-a-big-sucker-with-a-lot-of-money sign off your ass."

"They're gods, son." Jordan parked, pushed open the door. "I don't think a poker

face is going to make much difference."

"I don't know why you think they'll consider selling the place to you,"

Brad

continued. "They only bought it a couple of months ago. Gods or not, there are the

small matters of equity, taxes, capital gains."

"Listen to the suit." Flynn grinned as Moe leaped over him and out of the car.

"Shut up. You're in shock, remember? Takes a good thirty minutes to get down to

the Valley from here," Brad continued.

"The way you drive, it does," Jordan muttered under his breath.

"I heard that. Thirty minutes," Brad repeated, "for a mature adult who has respect for the speed limit. And that's in good weather. Fine for you, you can stay home and write in your underwear. Dana's going to be running a business in town, six days a week."

"Six?" Jordan turned from studying the house. "How do you know they're planning on being open six days?"

"I got that from Zoe in between her sniping at me. The

268

NORA ROBERTS

point is, she's going to have to travel down there most every day. And in the winter-"

"I'll buy her a four-wheel, a goddamn Humvee. Stop fretting, Mary."

"Just for that, I hope-if they're in the market for a buyer-they hose you." Rowena opened the door and was already laughing as she bent down to greet Moe.

"Welcome! How lovely. Three handsome men and a handsome dog."

"You call that dog handsome," Jordan commented. "It must be love."

"And so it is." She straightened, smiled brilliantly as she looked into Jordan's eyes.

"So it is. Come in."

Moe didn't need a second invitation. He raced by her, skidded on the tiles, bumped into the archway on his turn into the parlor. When they caught up with him, he was curled into a chair, his chin resting on its velvet arm, his tail thumping.

"Hey! Off the furniture, you ingrate."

Even as Flynn moved over to haul him down<Moe's big brown eyes shifted to

Rowena. His tail thumped harder.

"No, please. He's perfectly welcome to sit there. After all." She hurried over to

intervene. "After all, he's a guest."

"He's an operator."

"Yes." She stroked one of his floppy ears. "And he ... what's the phrase?"

He has my

number. No harm. Now what can I offer you? Coffee, tea?" The corner of her lips

twitched as she looked at Flynn. "Perhaps a cold beer."

"Did you read my mind or do I just look like a guy who wants a beer right now?"

"Perhaps a bit of both. Please, follow Moe's lead, and sit. Be comfortable. I'll just

be a moment."

"Is Pitte available?" Jordan asked.

"Certainly. I'll ask him to join us."

Brad waited until she'd left the room, then turned to Jordan. "Okay, I can't stand it.

Don't just blurt out how you

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

269

want this house and always have, or something lamebrained like that."

"Do I look like I just fell out of the nest?" "Ever bought a house before?"

"No, but-"

"I have. You're a successful author with a string of bestsellers. They know you've

got money. Add some sparkly childhood dream to that and you're just asking to get

taken." Jordan took a seat. "You know, I'm beginning to see why you irritate Zoe."

Brad looked down his nose. "I don't irritate her, I make her nervous. The irritation

is merely a side effect of the nerves."

"Yeah, I'm starting to get it, too," Flynn put in, and flopped down in his chair,

much like his dog. He perked up as Rowena came back, carrying a tray. "Hey, let me give you a hand with that." Flynn pushed to his feet, took the tray that held five pilsners of beer.

"Thank you. Please, help yourselves. Pitte will be right along." She sat on the sofa, curled up her legs, and sent Flynn a silky smile when he offered her one of the glasses. "It's an important day."

He felt his stomach clutch when she looked at him. "Yeah. I guess it is."

"You're allowed to feel a bit off-center. It's human. Ah, here's Pitte."

"Good afternoon. Rowena tells me we've things to talk about." He sat on the sofa

beside her, reached for a beer. "You're well?"

"Seem to be," Jordan answered. "Maybe I should start with what's happened."

He told them first of Kane's taking Dana back into their past.

"It's interesting." Pitte studied his beer, considered. "More straightforward than

one expects from him." "A method that matches his quarry," Rowena said.

270 NORA ROBERTS

"Clever of him. He doesn't attempt to trick or deceive her. Rather he tells her

precisely what he's doing, allows her to see, and still experience. Yes, it was a very good strategy."

"It might have worked. Nearly did. I don't think we'd be where we are, at least not

now, if Malory hadn't given us bom a push."

"The six of you are part of one whole. Vital and individual," Rowena added, "but

stronger yet for your connection. How did you resolve this thing with Dana?"

"Do I have to tell you? I can just about see the little red hearts circling over my head myself."

"I'd still like to hear what you say, and how you say it." As he complied, she nodded, slid her hand into Pitte's. "It's difficult," she said, "to know what to let go

of, what to hold. I'm happy for you both, that you held each other."

"So am I, for purely personal reasons. But it plays into the rest, doesn't it?" Jordan

watched her face, wished he could read it. "It's part of the quest."

"In a tapestry, every thread matters. The length, the texture, the hue. He wished to

separate you; you didn't allow it. The thread between you is long, and rich, and

strong." "Why is it so important that he separate us?" "You're more together than

you are apart. You know that."* "It's not only that." He leaned forward.

"Help me help her."

"You have. You will. I believe that." "She's nearly out of time."

"You've come farther than you think, so be careful. He'll do whatever he can to break that thread."

Jordan sat back. "He won't break it; There's another reason I'm here. I'm starting to

wonder if it's not part of the tapestry as well. I want to buy this house."

Brad made a strangled sound in his throat that had Pitte shooting him a dryly

amused glance. "Would you care for some water?"

OF KNOWLEDGE

271

"No. No." With a sigh, Brad drank more beer. "No."

"The big businessman over there figures I should tap-dance around, and we'll play

let's negotiate for an hour or two. I don't see the point. I don't know what your plans are for the place once this is all done, but if you're willing to sell, I'm ready to buy."

Why doesn't he just give them a blank check? Brad thought to himself. Access to

his brokerage account, the deed to his condo hi New York?

"Your business-minded friend has some excellent points." Sending Brad a nod of

acknowledgment, Pitte swirled his beer. "I've developed a number of business

interests over time. I enjoy ..." He gave Rowena a questioning glance.

"Wheeling and dealing."

"Yes. It's an entertaining hobby. This property, beyond suiting our needs during

this period, is quite desirable. A house of this size and material, with its history

and its location-which includes twenty-five point three acres, both cleared and

wooded, a six-car garage, an indoor swimming pool, with steam room and..."

"Whirlpool tub," Rowena supplied on a bubble of laughter. "We quite enjoy the

whirlpool tub."

"Yes." He lifted her hand, nipped her knuckles. "As well as a number of other

details and amenities-"

"Please." Unable to hold back, Brad lifted a hand. "This place is an enormous

white elephant. Amenities and history are one thing, but it's twenty miles away

from the Valley-"

"Eighteen point six," Pitte corrected" blandly.

"On a narrow road that twists straight up the mountain," Brad continued.

"It's

bound to cost a fortune to heat and cool. You put it on the market tomorrow, you'd

be lucky to get a serious offer within the next decade."

Pitte stretched out his legs, crossed his ankles. It occurred to Jordan that this was

the most relaxed he'd seen Pitte in the weeks of their acquaintance.

£72

NORA ROBERTS

"I would enjoy doing business with you," he told Brad. "Perhaps, at some point,

there will be an opportunity. I believe it would be very stimulating."

"Right now you're doing business with me" Jordan reminded him,

.

"Yes, that's true." Pitte's gaze shifted to Jordan.

"I have a question first." Rowena patted Pitte's arm to hold him off, then looked at

Jordan. "Why do you want this house?"

"I've always wanted it."

Brad rolled his eyes toward heaven. "Have pity on him."

"The question is why."

"It... spoke to me. I don't mean that literally."

"No." Rowena nodded. "I understand you. Go on."

"When I was a kid, I would look up here and I'd think: That's my house.

It's just

waiting for me to grow up. I remember telling my mother that I was going to buy it

for her one day, and she'd be able to stand up here, on the top of the world."

He shrugged. "When I was older, I would drive up here sometimes, look at the

place and tell myself that one day I'd drive through the gates and walk right in the

front door. It's beautiful, and it's strong, and it may be all the way up here, but it's part of what makes the Valley what it is. I couldn't give it to my mother. I want to give it to Dana. I want to build a life with her here, raise children with her here. I want to be able to look down at the Valley and know we're all a part of something solid and real and important."

"You can have the house."

The gleam in Pitte's eyes winked out. "Rowena!"

"For its appraised value," she continued, wagging a finger at her lover.

"And not a penny more."

"You wound me, a ghra"

"You won't charge him for the legal business of it, the settlement, the transfer,

whatever it is. You will pay the fees and the ... what are they called?" she asked

Brad.

KEY-OF KNOWLEDGE - £73

"Points." He had to swallow a laugh. "I think you mean points."

"Yes, all of that sort of business." She thought for a moment. "I think that's

everything."

Pitte hissed out a breath. "Women are a trial to a man. Why don't I just wrap bows

around the place and gift it to him?"

"Because he wouldn't accept." She leaned over to kiss Pitte's cheek while he

scowled. "It's always been his," she said. "You know that as well as I."

"Be that as it may." He drummed his fingers on his knee. "You and I," he said to

Jordan, "will work out the details of the thing without the female buzzing about."

"At your convenience."

"Shake hands on it, Pitte." Rowena gave him a nudge. "Shake hands on the terms just set."

"Bloody hell." He shoved himself to his feet, held out a hand. "Might as well do it, then, or she'll nag me hairless."

Jordan clasped Pitte's hand, felt a quick jolt. It might have been power, he mused, or simple frustration. It was hard to tell when you were closing a deal with a god.

"Thank you."

"So you should thank me. Your friend over there will know I could turn considerably more than the appraised value in this current market."

"That handshake binding?" Brad wondered.

"It is."

"Without a full inspection of the property, I'd say you'd have gotten ten percent over appraisal. Minimum."

"More like fifteen." Though he'd been carefully silent during the transaction, Flynn spoke up now. "When you publish the local paper, you know these things. There's a hotelier who's tried to buy it up, turn it into a resort. He got close a couple of times," Flynn continued conversationally. "But something always screwed the deal. Bad luck for him."

274

NORA ROBERTS

S"*

Rowena met his quiet look, and smiled. "Indeed. Would you care to go through some of the house now, Jordan?"

Before he could open his mouth, Flynn tapped his watch. "We're running a little short on time."

"Ah, well. Soon, then." She took Jordan's hand as well, squeezed it once. "You

must see more of it, and the views, of course, from the terraces and balcony and parapet."

"I'll look forward to it. I'll bring Dana and we'll..."

He trailed off, staring at her, the way she stood. Slim and quiet and somehow apart from the rest of them.

And he saw the woman standing on the parapet under a gleaming moon with her dark cloak billowing in the wind.

"It was you. All those years ago, I saw you."

"I saw you." She touched a hand, very gently, to his cheek. "A young, handsome boy, so troubled, so full of thoughts. I wondered when you'd remember me."

"Why did I see you? Why didn't they?"

"They didn't need to."

He wasn't sure what it all meant, and Rowena had left him wondering. What he

needed, Jordan decided, as he let himself into Dana's apartment, was a little time

to get his thoughts into some sort of order.

Maybe he should write them down, as he had with the sequence of events. He

would sit down at Dana's computer and just let it flow.

But when he walked into the bedroom, he heard the shower running. He hadn't

noticed her car parked out front, which meant, he concluded, that his mind was

somewhere else. He poked into the bathroom to let her know he was there.

Her scream could have shattered brick when he tugged back the shower curtain.

With one hand over her heart, the other shoving at her

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

275

dripping hair, she gasped for air. "Why don't you just make that squeaky violin

music and finish the job?"

"Hey, it's not like I'm wearing a dress and carrying a knife. I just wanted to tell you

I was here, so I wouldn't scare you when you came out."

"Yeah, better to scare me when I'm wet and naked and helpless."

He pursed his lips. She'd always looked good wet and naked.

"Helpless?"

"Okay, maybe not helpless." She reached out, grabbed a fistful of his shirt. "Get in

here, big guy."

"Tempting, very tempting, but I need to talk to you about some stuff, and we need

to get to Flynn's."

"Talk later, hot, steamy sex now."

"It's really hard to argue with that." He toed off his shoes.

She waited until he stepped in behind her, then handed him the soap and an

over-the shoulder invitation. "Wash my back?"

"I can start there."

"Mmrn. I'm going to get all... slippery and ... slick and ... That's not my back."

He slid his soapy hands over her butt. "It's behind you, so it counts."

Bending his

head, he skimmed his teeth over her shoulder. "You've got the most incredible

body. Have I mentioned that before?"

"Maybe once or twice, but I don't mind redundancy under certain circumstances."

She dipped her head back as his hands sleeked up her torso, slithered over her

breasts. "Such as that."

"Then I'll risk repeating myself." He turned her around. "I love you." He laid his

lips on hers. "I'm so in love with you."

With a sound of pleasure and joy, she hooked her arms around his neck, poured herself into him.

Water sluiced over them, and the steam billowed up. Resh slid over flesh, and

soapy hands glided to tease and arouse. Lips rubbed and nibbled, then began to

hunger.

***76 NORA ROBERTS**

Her heart was so full she wondered it didn't burst like light and rock the room. "It's

different." She kissed his mouth, his throat, his mouth. "It's different now,

knowing you love me." She fisted her hands in his hair to draw him back an inch.

"It's different now, when I can tell you I love you."

"Then it's always going to be different, because I'm never going to stop." Their mouths met again.

It was different. Every touch, every taste, every need was gilded with a sense of

belonging. Water showered over them as he anchored her, as he slipped inside her.

The beauty of it brought her a thousand sweet aches.

Hers now, he was hers now. And she was his.

She held tight, and matched him beat for beat.

Emotions swamped him, sensations; drowned him, and all he could see was her.

The dark eyes, the sleek hair, the strong mouth, and water streaming down her face like tears. She held him, body and heart. And, he realized, she always had.

He felt her tremble, heard her breath shudder and catch, then her eyes went beautiful and opaque as she came.

As she tightened around him, he pressed his mouth to hers again, and gave himself to her.

After, a long time after, they simply stood holding each other.

"This is good, Jordan. This is really good."

"Yeah."

"Even though the water's getting cold. I feel all lazy and sleepy. I wish we could

slide into bed instead of getting dressed and going over to Flynn's."

"If you're too tired to go-"

"That's not it. I just want to lie around in bed with you."

He drew her back. "I can't argue with that either."

"But we're going to get dressed and go over to Flynn's because lying around in bed

would be wrong." She kissed him lightly. "Jesus, the water is getting cold."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

277

He reached behind her and switched it off. "We can go over, then leave early and

come back and lie around in bed."

"Good plan." She stepped out of the shower, grabbed a towel. "So, what's this

mysterious mission you went on today?" She wrapped her hair in the towel,

grabbed a second one.

He held out a hand, thinking it was for him, but she started drying her legs with it.

He shook his head, got yet another towel for himself.

"We'll talk about it later."

"What's wrong with now?"

"Because we're in the bathroom, naked. It's just not the right place for it."

"That's silly. We've had naked conversations before. In fact, we've had some very

interesting naked conversations. Where did you go, and why did you need Brad

and Flynn along? Because I know they went with you. I have ways of getting that

sort of information."

She grabbed a bottle of body cream and poured some into her hand.

"I'll tell you later. You'll appreciate the fact that we get into this in a more

appropriate setting."

"See, now you're making me crazy." She slathered on cream. "Which forces me to

grill you. You were gone for hours. Where did you go? What did you do?"

"We went to a titty bar and drank cheap booze while women with fascinating

man-made breasts slid around on long, shiny poles."

"You think that'll irritate me and I'll leave you alone, but you're wrong."

She took

the towel off her head and finger-combed her hair. "Personally, I don't have a

problem with guys going to strip clubs and making jackasses of themselves. So

you might as well tell me the truth."

"Fine. Here and now, then." He picked up his pants, dug the jeweler's box out of

the pocket. He held it out to her, flipped up the lid with his thumb.

"Oh, my Jesus Christ," she said and sat down heavily on the lid of the toilet. ,

"Yeah, that's romance. You like it or what?"

She had to swallow. "Depends."

"On what?" He scowled, turned the box around to study the ring. It looked great,

he decided, but there was never any certainty with women. "I figured you'd like

this better than the standard diamond. But if you'd rather go that route, I can

exchange it."

She shivered, but she didn't feel cold. Not in the least. "Then that would be an

engagement ring you've got there."

"What the hell do you think it is? Would you stand up? This is just a little too

bizarre."

"Sorry." She got to her feet. "I wasn't sure what it meant."

"It means marry me, Dana." He had to push his dripping hair back. "It means I

love you, and I want to spend my life with you. I want to make children with you,

and grow old with you."

She'd thought her heart was full, but it hadn't been. There was still room, so much

room for him. "Oh, well, that clears things up nicely. It's a beautiful ring. It's the

most beautiful ring I've ever seen. You were only wrong about one thing."

"What's that?"

"I don't mind the time and place, Jordan." She looked up at him now with a

brilliant smile. "I don't mind it at all. In fact, if you would put that on my finger, I'd

like it to be the only thing I'm wearing for the next few minutes."
Holding out her
hand, she took one quick, catchy breath. "I'd really love to wear that
ring. I'd love
to marry you, and all the rest of it, too."
He took it out, set the box aside, then lifted her left hand. "This is one
more
beginning for us."

"I'm looking forward to the rest of them."

He slipped the ring on her finger. There was a little buzz

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

279

of heat, then a lovely spread of warmth where the gold circled her finger.
"It's

beautiful. It even fits."

"Yeah? None of us knew your ring size, so that's a bonus." He turned her
hand,

watched the stone sparkle. "It looks good on you."

She rose to her toes, took his mouth with hers. "You're so full of
surprises."

"You've got that right. I might as well tell you the next one. I bought-or
I'm

buying-Warrior's Peak."

She blinked twice, very slowly. "Sorry. I thought you said you were
buying the
Peak."

"That's right. I want us to live there. I want us to make a family there."

"You ..." Though her knees wobbled, she didn't give in and sit down
again. "You're

not going back to New York?"

"Of course I'm not going back to New York." Bafflement moved over
his face.

"How the hell am I supposed to be married to you and live in New York
while you
run a business in the Valley? Dana."

"I thought... It's where you live."

He cupped her chin, unsure if he was impatient or amused. "You think I'd ask you to move to New York, throw away your store before it even gets started? I was never planning to go back there to live anyway, but if I had been, this would've changed it."

"You weren't going back?"

"No. There was a time when I had to leave. This was the time when I had to come

back. I need to be here. I need to be with you."

"I would've gone with, you," she managed. "I want points for that."

"We're not going anywhere. If the Peak doesn't suit you, we'll-"

"You're just trying to get points back." Overcome, she laughed and threw her arms

around him. "You know it suits me. God, this is fantastic. It's amazing. But please tell

280

NORA ROBERTS

me that's the last surprise. My head's going to spin right off my shoulders."

"That's pretty much it for now."

"Let's get dressed, get over to Flynn's." She pressed her hands palm to palm and

stared at her ring. "I can't wait to tell everyone."

"Flynn and Brad already know."

"Men." She flicked them away with a wave as she walked into the bedroom. "They

don't know anything. Boy, oh, boy, wait until Malory and Zoe get a load of this

ring! I've got to find a really cool outfit to set it off."

"I like the one you're wearing now."

She shot a look over her shoulder before she dived into her closet. "See?
Men don't
know anything."

Ch

apter

WHEN Moe dragged Flynn into the house, they heard the single, high-
pitched
scream. Moe bared his teeth, Flynn bared his, and they raced toward the
kitchen
prepared to taste blood.

Malory stood in the center of the room, her hands crossed over her heart,
laughing
like an idiot.

"Where is he? What did he do? Son of a bitch."

"Who?" Malory braced herself for Moe's leap of love but wasn't
prepared to have

Flynn lift her off her feet. "What?"

"You were screaming."

"Oh. Okay, Moe, down you go. Flynn, put me down. I'm fine, I'm
perfectly fine."

Other than the fact that she was flushed with embarrassment and trying
not to
giggle. "I thought I was alone."

Reaction set in and made Flynn short of breath. He dropped Malory back
on her

feet with a little thump as his arms started to tremble. "You stand in the
kitchen

and scream when you think you're alone?"

282

NORA ROBERTS

"Well, not usually. But look! Just look." She did a fast-time step,
followed by a
neat little pirouette.

Clueless, Rynn tried again. "You've realized you want to fulfill a
childhood dream

and become a dancing star of stage and screen?"

"No!" With a laugh, she whirled Flynn into a circle that had Moe leaping again.

"Look. We have a floor. A wonderful, beautiful hardwood floor." :

She executed what Flynn thought might be some sort of clog dance.

"Sounds like
wood, all right."

"No more ugly linoleum for us. And look at this!" She whirled away from him and

embraced the glossy new side-by-side refrigerator with the passion of a woman

greeting a lover returning from the war. "Isn't it wonderful? And see how it

matches this?"

While Flynn watched, she spun to the range. "It's so beautiful." She crooned it

now. "So shiny and clean. And everything works. I tried all the buttons and dials,

and it works! I actually can't wait to cook something. I walked in, saw all this, and

I just had to scream. The key put in the floor, Flynn, and brought in the appliances.

See the new microwave?" "Very sexy."

"It is." Whirling into a dance again, she tried out a rhumba. "And we have pretty

new cabinets with pretty glass fronts. I'm going to put pretty dishes hi them, and

sparkly glasses. It's a kitchen. An actual kitchen."

He was getting it now, and the charge of watching her revel. She'd switched from

the rhumba to... he wasn't sure 'what. But she looked really cute. "What was it

before?"

"There is no name for what it was before. I'm so happy. I'm so grateful. You're the

most wonderful man in the world." She caught his face in her hands and kissed

him. "And I'm a terrible person."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

283

"Why? Not the 'I'm wonderful' part, because, hey. But why are you a terrible person?"

"Because I wouldn't move in with you before you did this. I made the kitchen a

kind of exchange. Remodel the kitchen and I'll live with you. It was selfish. It

worked," she added, raining kisses over his face. "But it was selfish.

You're doing

this for me. I know I said I wouldn't move in until it was finished, and I even made

snarky comments about the lamps up in the bedroom."

"Something about not being fit to light a cave inhabited by bats and blind spiders."

"Yes, that was one of them. Anyway, forgive me?"

"Okay."

"I know it's not quite finished. There's still the counters and the backsplash and,

oh, a few more things, but I don't want to wait anymore. I'll move in tomorrow,

and we can start, officially, living together."

"I don't want to live together."

Her face went blank.

"What?"

"Sorry, Mai." He gave her shoulders a squeeze. "I don't want to live together."

"But... but you asked me to move in with you weeks ago. You've asked me half a

dozen times."

"Yeah, well." He shrugged. "I changed my mind."

"You-you changed your mind"

"That's right." Casually, he opened the new refrigerator. "Wow. Look at all this

room. And it is shiny."

She couldn't do anything but stare at him. Her stomach had dropped to her feet,

and those feet no longer felt like dancing. "I don't understand. I don't understand

how you could just change your mind about something like this, from one minute

to the next."

"Me either. Actually, I don't think I really changed it, I think I just realized it

wasn't what I wanted."

284

NORA ROBERTS

"You just realized you don't want me." There was too much shock, too much anger

for the pain to fight through. So she rode on the shock .and the anger and stepped

forward to give him a hard shove. "Well, that's just fine."

"I didn't say I didn't want you. I said I didn't want to live together."

"You can take your new kitchen and stuff it. If you can't handle a committed, adult

relationship then you can't handle me."

"There you go, we're right on the same page. Committed, adult relationship." He

pulled the box from his pocket, opened it. "This adult enough for you?"

Her mouth dropped open, and he thought she'd never looked more beautiful as she

stared down, dumbstruck, at the diamond ring.

"Let's be really grown-up, Malory. Let's get married."

"You want to marry me?"

"I do. Look, I already know my lines ."-He grinned at her. "You look a little pale.

I'm going to take that as a good sign. The jeweler said this was a classic, and Brad

gave it a thumbs-up." Flynn removed the ring from the box. "Brilliant-cut solitaire,

blah-blah, whatever. You go for the classic look, right?"

A latch kept trying to slam shut in her throat, but she forced it open.

"Yes, I do."

"There, you know your lines, too." He took her limp hand, slipped the ring on

before she could say another word. "It fits. I didn't think it would, you've got such

delicate fingers, but it looks like we won't have to have it sized after all." She felt the snap of heat, the spread of warmth from the gold circling her skin.

Yes, it fit, she thought dreamily. It looked as if it had been made for her finger.

"It's beautiful. It's absolutely beautiful."

"You could say yes now."

She looked up from the ring, into his eyes. "Life's going to be a roller coaster with

you. I used to be afraid of roller

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

285

coasters because you just never know what they're going to do next.

They don't

scare me anymore." "Say yes. I'll get rid of the lamps."

On something between a sob and a laugh, she leaped into his arms. "Yes.

You

know it's yes, even with the ugly lamps."

"I love you."

"I love you, too." With her cheek pressed to his, she held up her ring hand and

watched the diamond glitter. "How could the same man who bought this gorgeous

ring have bought those hideous lamps?"

"The many sides of Flynn Hennessy."

"Lucky for me." She heard the front door open and moved nearly as fast as Moe.

"Oh, they're coming. I have to show it off." She pushed away from Flynn, then

nipped back to kiss him again. "I have to show somebody."

She hurried toward the front of the house, even as Dana hurried toward the back

with Zoe at her heels.

"What is it?" Zoe demanded.

"Have to show you both at once. Boy, have. I got news for you," Dana said when

Malory rushed toward her.

"Whatever it is, it can't top mine. I've got news for your

Zoe pushed between them. "Jeez, somebody tell somebody something before I

explode."

"Me first," Dana and Malory said in unison, then both held out their left hands.

There were screams, followed by a burst of unintelligible words. At least they

were unintelligible to the three men and a boy who looked on.

Simon watched his mother and her two friends jump and squeal like the girls did

on the playground at school. Wrinkling his brow, he looked up at Brad.

"How come they do that?"

"It's just one of the many mysteries of life, kid."

"Girls are dopey." He clapped for the dog, who was

286

NORA ROBERTS

blindly joining in the female ecstasy, and hunkered down for some wrestling.

Flynn looked past the women to Jordan. "Beer?" he asked. "Beer,"

Jordan agreed,

and skirted the madness to seek the relative sanity of the kitchen.

"I can't believe it!" Zoe gripped both Malory's and Dana's hands and bounced on her toes. "Engaged! You're both engaged. At the same time. It's like magic. The rings. They're so beautiful. Oh, boy." She dug into her pocket for a tissue.

"Sheesh. Mom, get a grip." Zoe sent her son a glare. "I'll give you a grip." He snorted, rolled with a delighted Moe. "Are we getting pizza, or what?" "Why don't you go back in the kitchen and ask Flynn? Politely," she added as he scrambled up.

"I've got to show you the kitchen," Malory remembered. "But first." She grabbed Dana's hand again to admire the ruby. "It's gorgeous. So perfect for you." "So's he.

Wait until I tell you how he asked me." , 'I can top it," Malory claimed. "Were you naked?" "No."

Dana licked a finger, swiped it down an imaginary Scoreboard. "I win." "Mom!" Simon shouted from the kitchen door. "The guys say if you all want pizza you have to say what kind, or else you have to take what you get." "Tell you what." Zoe draped an arm around her friends' shoulders.

"When we don't have a bunch of guys cluttering things up, you can tell me, and each other, every detail. We'll have a little celebration at Indulgence hi the morning." "Works for me," Dana agreed. "I'm starved, and I don't want a bunch of onions and mushrooms messing up my pie."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

287

A N hour later, Dana was polishing off her third piece. She stretched out on the

floor beside Simon and Moe and said, "Ugh."

"On that note," Flynn began, "let's talk about finding this key."

"Simon, why don't you take your book upstairs? That's all right, isn't it?"
Zoe asked

Flynn.

"Sure. He knows the way."

"You and Moe can hang out. I'll call you when it's time to go."

"How come we can't hang out here while you talk about the magic stuff?"

"Where do you get that?" Zoe demanded. "Simon, have you been eavesdropping?"

"Jeez, Mom." He sent her an insulted, sulky frown. "I don't have to go sneaking around, I just have to have ears." He pinched them between his fingers, wiggled

them. "Hey, look! I've got two of them."

"We'll talk about your ears later. Upstairs, to that horrible prison with a TV and a dog. You can write a letter of complaint to your congressman tomorrow."

"Man." Though his lips twitched, he rolled his eyes for form, then they widened and focused on what Brad held in his hand. "Holy Cow! WWF Smackdown!"

"Maybe you want to borrow it, take it for a few rounds."

"Yeah? Smackdown! It really kicks-" He caught himself, swallowed back the word

that would get him in serious hot water with his mother. "Really kicks," he

amended. "Thanks."

"No problem. This way when we go mono a mano and I humiliate you, you won't

be able to whine that you didn't get to practice."

"Yeah, sure, right." Simon took the video disk. "This is so way cool. Thanks."

He streaked off, hooking his book bag under one arm and calling for Moe.

288-

NORA ROBERTS

Zoe folded her hands in her lap. "That was very nice of you."

"He may not think so when I trounce him in the upcoming match."

"I don't want you to feel obligated to-"

"I don't." Brad cut her off, coolly, firmly, then deliberately looked at Dana. "You

want to get this rolling?"

"As long as I can start it from the supine position. As previously discussed, Jordan

wrote up the sequence of events."

"He gave me a copy," Malory interrupted. "And I made copies for everyone. I'll go

get them."

"She's something, isn't she?" Dana commented as Malory left the room.

"Our own

Debbie Detail. Since Mai's already read it, and the rest of you will, I'll just say that

it puts everything into a comprehensive and cohesive form. It's helpful to see just

how everything's unfolded to this point. Malory, Zoe, and I getting the invitation

to Warrior's Peak, meeting there for the first time. Our first contact with Rowena

and Pitte, and hearing the story of the Daughters of Glass. Though we didn't know

they were called that until Flynn stepped in."

"There's the way Flynn met Malory, and became a part of the quest,"

Jordan

continued. "The fact that each of you was at a crossroads, jobwise."

"We were in trouble, jobwise," Zoe corrected. "And that made the offer of

twenty-five thousand dollars for agreeing to look for keys-keys I don't think any of us really believed in-that first night too tempting to pass up." "It's more than that." Malory came back in and distributed manila envelopes, neatly labeled with names. 'There was the financial incentive, yes. But there was also a sense of mutual frustration, of being in flux, not knowing what we were going to do next. And that almost instant connection between us. Jordan caught that, very clearly, in writing it out."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

289

"Add-,to that how those tendrils spread out," Dana went on. "How they hooked Jordan and Brad in. Connecting them to us, to the quest, to Rowena and Pitte, and to the daughters. I think that's an important point. Each of us has a role, each of us has to be here for this thing to go through." "Then there's Kane." Malory slid her copy out of the envelope. "The way you describe him, Jordan, it's so spooky-and so accurate. As if you'd seen him through my eyes." "Seeing him through my own was enough. I think we need to look at him as more than the bogeyman, more than a foe. He's another element to the quest." "I agree with that." Brad nodded. "He's as essential to this as the rest of us are. In the end, I think, it's not going to be just a matter of outwitting him, as Malory did, or twisting his game to our advantage, as Dana's done so far. It's going to be a matter of destroying him." "How do you destroy a god?" Zoe demanded.

"I don't know, but first I'd say by believing you can do it."

"Maybe. But right now I'll settle for getting my hands on the key." Dana sat up. "I've only got a few more days. And here's what I know. While I may have to find it on my own, Jordan is essential to the search. Kane has tried to separate us or pull us apart, and it's not just because he doesn't want us to live happily ever after. What he did, however, was push us closer together. He's not going to be pleased by that."

She reached over, peeled a round of pepperoni off a slice of pizza and nibbled;

"And he miscalculated by showing me the past. That was one of the steps I had to take, and might not have, at least not as decisively, if he hadn't thrown me back in time. Past, present, and future. I've resolved and accepted the past, I've made my peace with the present, and..."

She held up her ring hand. "I'm looking toward the
290

NORA ROBERTS

future. This is important stuff, not only to me personally but to what I'm meant to do. One of the constants in those three time frames is Jordan."

"Thanks, Stretch."

"Don't get all puffed up. Some of this is just fate. Now if you read some of this stuff..." She plucked the copy out of Malory's hands. "You start to feel it, see it, even if you weren't part of that particular event. You get a good, clear picture.

Here-that blue fog that took over Indulgence. The bone marrow chill of it, the oddness of the light, the color, the texture. You start to feel it creeping over your

skin."

"Writer's tools," Jordan said.

"Yeah, and you're damn good with them."

"Excuse me?"

Mildly annoyed with the interruption, she glanced up to see him staring at her

with a kind of narrowed intensity that brought heat to her face. "I said you were

good. So what?"

"So ... there's a first time for everything. Need another drink," he said and walked

out of the room.

Dana shifted, then huffed out a breath. "Short break," she announced, and followed

Jordan to the kitchen.

"What's the deal?"

He pulled a soda out of the refrigerator. "No deal." he popped the top, then

shrugged. "You never-well; since I moved to New York, you've never had a good

word to say about my work."

"I was pissed at you."

"Yeah, I get that." He started to take a swig, then set it down. Truth, he thought

again. No matter how it exposed him, there had to be truth between them.

"The thing is, Dana, it mattered. There's nobody's opinion I respect or value more

when it comes to books than yours. So it mattered what you thought of my work."

"You want to know what I think of your work? My honest opinion?"

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

291

"Yeah, let's be honest."

"Well, you did buy me this really terrific ring, so I guess I should come clean." She took the soda, sipped, handed it back. "You have such an amazing talent. You have a gift, and it's obvious that you nurture and appreciate it. Every time I've read one of your books I've been astonished by your range, your scope, your skill with the language. Even when I hated you, Jordan, I was proud of you." "How about that," he managed. "I'm not sorry I swiped at it before. Maybe it made you work harder." He had to grin at her. "Maybe it did." "Are we okay now?" "We're a lot better than okay." "Then let's go back, because I haven't finished. And I'm going to be very interested in what you think of what I have to say next." She walked back out to the living room, settled down on the floor again. "Okay," she said, raising her voice over the conversations. "Break's over. The point I was trying to make was that however skilled Jordan might be, this is more than a writer's point of view. It's more than a series of events entertainingly woven together in story form. When you read it, you start to see how often he's linked to one of those events, or is to one of the people involved in the event. In fact, he was the first, years ago, to see or feel anything, well, otherworldly about the Peak, He once thought he saw a ghost there." She stopped, amused to see Malory pick up a highlighter from the crate and begin to mark the sections under discussion on Flynn's copy.

"Jordan was the first of us to see, and own, one of Rowena's paintings," Dana continued. "Flynn's my brother, Brad's my friend, but Jordan stepped up from being a kind of brother, from being a friend, to being my lover."

292

NORA ROBERTS

"He broke your heart." Malory meticulously coated typed words with bright yellow. "A shattering of innocence. Sorry," she said to Jordan, "but there's a very strong kind of magic in that."

"And it was Jordan's blood that Kane shed." Nodding at Malory, Dana smiled.

"He's the one who left home- orphaned, alone, young, on a quest. And came back,"

she concluded, meeting Jordan's eyes, "to finish it."

"You think I have the key." Fascinated, Jordan sat back. "I follow the logic, and

the traditional elements of your theory, Dane, but where? How? When?"

"I can't know everything. But it makes sense. It just plays through. I haven't

hammered it all out yet. There's still that business about goddesses walking and

waiting. Walking where? Waiting for what? Then there's that image I saw when I

was trying to put myself into a trance."

Something started to click in his head, then shut off again at her last statement.

"When you did what?"

"An experiment. Like meditation. Blank out the mind, that sort of thing, and see

what formed. I saw the key, just sort of floating on this blue-green field.

Probably

my wall at Indulgence, as that's what I'd been staring at.-It was like I could reach out and touch it. But I couldn't." Frowning, she looked back, imagined it all again. "Then the field changed. White with these blurry black lines running across it. And I heard these words in my head." "You heard voices?" Brad asked her. "Not exactly. But I heard the words.

Wait a minute, let me think, get it right. 'She walks the night, and is the night with all its ... all its shadows and secrets. And when she weeps, she weeps for day.'

"So, doesn't it make sense that she's the goddess- whoever the hell she is? That's

got to be one of the last pieces to put into place."

"I can put it in place," Jordan told her. "It's mine. I wrote it. Phantom Watch."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

293

There was a moment of stunned silence, then everyone began talking at once.

"Hold it!" Brad got to his feet, held up his hands. "I said hold it! Let's not lose the thread. First, let's eliminate any coincidence. Dana, did you read the book?"

"Yes, but-"

"You did?"

She rolled her eyes at Jordan. "I'm not going into another round of pumping your creative ego. Yeah, I read it, but it was years ago. Even I don't remember every

line of every book I've ever read. I didn't recognize it when I heard it."

"I read it, too." Zoe raised her hand like a girl in a schoolroom, then, mortified,

immediately lowered it. "It was great," she said to Jordan. "But the woman, the one you wrote about walking at night, wasn't a goddess. She was a ghost."

"Good point," Brad put in. "But it's an interesting touch that Jordan wrote that book about Warrior's Peak, that he created that ghost because he thought he saw her one night."

"You did?" Zoe asked. "That's so cool!"

"We went up there to camp. Brad and Flynn and I. Brad managed to ... liberate some beer and cigarettes."

Now Zoe turned to Brad. "Is that so?"

"We were sixteen," he muttered.

"As if that makes it better."

"Scold him later," Dana demanded. "Let's pull this thread through."

"I saw her walking on the parapet," Jordan continued. "In the moonlight. Washed in light and shadows with her cloak streaming in a wind that wasn't there. I

thought she was a ghost, and when I wrote her I drew her as one.

Lonely, trapped

in the night and weeping for the day. But she wasn't a ghost."

Dana laid a hand on his knee. "She was a goddess."

"She was Rowena. I understood that today, when I went

S.94

NORA ROBERTS

to see them at the Peak. I didn't know what it meant until now."

"You were the first to see her," Dana said softly. "And you wrote of her, in whatever form. You gave her another kind of substance, another kind of world.

She, the key holder. The key's in the book."

Her hand trembled as it slid into place for her. "The white field with black lines across. Words on a page. And the key melted into it. Into the page. The book." She sprang to her feet. "Flynn, you've got a copy."

"Yeah." He looked around the room. "I'm not exactly sure where. I haven't unpacked everything yet."

"Why should you? You've only lived here nearly two years. Well, find it," Dana demanded.

He gave her a weary look, then rose. "I'll go upstairs and look."

.

"I've got a copy at home," Zoe put in. "A paperback. I've got all your books, but my budget doesn't run to hardcovers," she said in apology.

Jordan reached over, yanked her hand to his lips, "You are the sweetest thing."

"I could go get it. I might be able to bring it back before Flynn finds his."

"Give him a little time." Malory glanced at the ceiling, imagining Flynn upstairs rummaging through boxes. "I've got a copy, too, and my place is closer if it comes to that." Then she stopped, lifted the index fingers on both hands. "What do you want to bet we all have copies of Phantom Watch?"

"Well, I certainly do," Jordan confirmed.

"And me," Brad agreed.

"Yeah. Clink, clink, clink," Dana said. "That's the sound of links fusing on the chain. Come on, Flynn, how hard can it be to find a book?"

"When's the last time you've been up in one of those spare rooms?" Malory asked.

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

£95

"Good point." She began to pace. "It's in there. It's in there. I know it. I'll go up and find it myself."

She spun toward the doorway just as Flynn came jogging down the stairs.

"Got it. Hah. It was in a box labeled 'Books.' I didn't know I had a box labeled

'Books.'" He handed the book to Dana.

She ran her hand over it, hoping for some sort of sign, and studied the silhouette

of Warrior's Peak brooding under a full moon. She opened it, fanned the pages,

and smelled paper and dust.

"Where's the line, Jordan?"

"It's the end of the prologue."

She turned the first few pages, read the words in her head, spoke them out loud.

Waited.

"I don't feel anything. I should feel something. Malory?"

"There was an awareness, a kind of knowing. It's hard to explain."

"But I'd know it if I felt it," Dana finished. "And I don't. Maybe I have to read it,

get the whole picture. The way you had to paint the whole portrait before you

could reach the key."

"I wonder..." Zoe hesitated. "Well, I just wonder if maybe it's not in that book,

because that book's not yours. Jordan wrote it, so all the copies are his in a way.

But only one is yours. And you're the key, so wouldn't it make more sense for it to

have to be your own book?"

Dana stared at her, then grinned. "Zoe, that's absolutely brilliant. Okay, troops,

saddle up. Let's move this to my place."

"I'll be right behind you." Zoe picked up her purse. "I'll just run Simon home and

see if my neighbor will sit with him."

"Let me just get rid of these boxes. Zoe, I'm going to wrap up some of this leftover pizza for Simon."

29<5 NORA ROBERTS

Life, Dana decided, didn't stop. Not even for magic keys and wicked sorcerers.

And wasn't that why it was life?

"Meet us there after you're done the domestic stuff." She grabbed Jordan's hand,

headed for the door. "And you could "wrap up some slices for me while you're at it."

Cxhapter 1 Nineteen

D

! D you read the book, or did you just say you read the book?" Jordan asked as

they drove back to her apartment.

"Why would I just say I read it?"

"Beats me. But you said just the other day that you'd never been in a book before.

So I figured you'd never read Phantom Watch"

"You lost me."

"Did you read the book?"

"Yes, damn it. I hated that book. It was so good, and I wanted it to suck. I wanted

to be able to say, See, he's no big deal. But I couldn't. I was going to toss it out,

even fantasized briefly about burning it."

"Jesus, you were pissed."

"Oh, brother, let me tell you. Of course, I couldn't burn a book. My librarian's soul

would wither and die. I couldn't toss it out, either, for much the same reason. And

I could never

£98

NORA ROBERTS

bring myself to turn it in at the used bookstore or just give it away."

"I haven't seen any of my books in your apartment."

"You wouldn't. They're camouflaged."

He took his eyes off the road to laugh at her. "Get out."

"I didn't want people seeing I had your books. I didn't want to see I had your

books. But I had to have them."

"So you read Phantom Watch, but you didn't recognize Kate."

"Kate?" She reached back in her memory. "The heroine? Ah ... good brain, a little

arrogant about it. Strong-willed, self-reliant, content in her own company-which is

why she took all those long walks and ended up with that fascination for the

Peak-or the Watch, I should say."

She dug back a little deeper, let the image form. "Had a mouth on her. I admired

that. A tendency toward crankiness, especially toward the hero, but you couldn't

blame her. He asked for it. A small-town girl, and happy to stay that way. Worked

in, what was it, this little antiquarian bookshop, which is what put her in the

villain's- crosshairs."

"That's our girl."

"She had a healthy outlook toward sex, which I appreciated. Too many women in

fiction are painted as either virgin or slut. She used her head, which was a good

one, but it was that and a stubborn streak that got her in a jam."

"No bells ringing?" Jordan said after a moment.

"What bells? I don't..." A ripple of shock had her gaping at him. "Are you saying you based her on me?"

"Bits and pieces. A lot of bits and pieces. Jesus, Dana, she even had your eyes."

"My eyes are brown. Hers were ... something poetic."

" 'The color of chocolate, both rich and bitter.' Or something like that."

"I'm not stubborn. I'm... confident in my decisions."

"Uh-huh." He pulled up outside her building.

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

299

"I'm not arrogant. I simply have little patience for narrow minds or supercilious behavior."

"Yep."

She shoved out of the car. "It's starting to come back to me now. This Kate could be a real pain in the ass."

"At times. It's what made her interesting and real and human. Especially since she could also be generous and kind. She had a great sense of humor, the kind of woman who could laugh at herself."

Scowling at him, she unlocked her door. "Maybe."

As they walked in, Jordan gave her a friendly pat on the butt. "I fell pretty hard for her. Of course, if I were to write her today-" He backed Dana against the door, braced his hands on either side of her head.

"Yes?"

"I wouldn't change a thing." He lowered his mouth to hers, slid into the kiss. "I was so sure you'd read it, see yourself and get in touch with me. When you didn't get in

touch, I figured you'd never read it."

"Maybe I wasn't ready to see myself. But you can be sure I'm going to read it

again. The fact is, it's the only one of your books I never reread."

With a half laugh, he eased back. "You reread my books?"

"I can actually see your head swelling, so I'm going to get out of the way before

somebody gets hurt." She ducked under his arm, headed toward one of the

bookshelves.

"To the woman I lost. To the woman I found. To the only woman I've loved. How

fortunate for me that all three are one."

She looked back at him as she reached for a book. "What was that about?"

"It's the dedication I just wrote in my head for the book I'm working on now."

She dropped her hand. "God, Jordan, you're going to turn me into a puddle of

mush. You never used to say things like that to me."

300 NORA ROBERTS

"I used to think things like that. I just didn't know how to say them."

"This is the one I read a piece of. The one about redemption. I'll look forward to

reading the rest of it."

"I'll look forward to writing it for you."

He watched her remove a book from the shelf, slip off the outer dust jacket to

reveal the one beneath.

"'Phantom Watch'" he read, "'Jordan Hawke.' Covered up by ..." The laughter rolled

out of him. " 'How to Exterminate Pests from Home and Garden! Good one,

Stretch."

"Worked for me. I have another of yours under the cover of a novel titled
Dog-Eaters. A surprisingly dull and bloodless book, despite the title.
Then
there's... Well, doesn't matter. Just variations on the theme."
"I get it."
"Tell you what." She covered his hand with hers. "After we're done, you
and I will
have a ritual unveiling, after which I will, with some ceremony, place
your books
in their rightful place on the shelves."
"Sounds good." He looked down at the book, then back at her. "Going to
wait for
the others?"
"I can't." She could see he hadn't expected her to wait. "I'm too wound
up. And I
think, I feel, that this is something we're supposed to do. You and me."
"Then let's do it."
As she had with Flynn's copy, she ran her fingers over the cover, over
the
illustration of the Peak.
But this time, she felt... something. What had Malory called it? An
awareness.
Yes, Dana decided, exactly that. "This is it, Jordan," she whispered.
"The key's in
the book." Hands steady, she opened it.
Focus, she told herself. Concentrate. It was there. She only had to see it.
He watched her skim her fingers down the title page, the tips running
lightly over
his name. Her breath quickened.
KEY OF KNOWLEDGE
301
"Dana."
"I feel it. It's warm. It's waiting. She's waiting."

She flipped pages gently, then let out a single shocked gasp as the book fell out of her hands. He called her name again and caught her as she collapsed. Stunned, scared, he lowered her to the rug. She was breathing, he could feel her breathing, but she'd gone pale and cold as ice. "Come back. Dana, damn it, you come back." On a spurt of panic, he shook her. Her head rolled limply to the side. "Where did you take her, you son of a bitch?" He started to haul her up, and his gaze landed on the book that had fallen, open, on the floor. "Oh, my God." He picked her up, clamping her against him to warm her, to protect. He heard the voices out in the hall and fumbled the door open before Flynn could knock. "Dana." Flynn grabbed for her, ran his hands over her face. "No!" "He's got her," Jordan spat out. "The son of a bitch pulled her into the book. He's got her trapped in the goddamn book." SHE felt him take her. He'd wanted her to, she'd known that immediately. He'd taken her with pain so she would be sure to know he could. He'd ripped the consciousness from her body as gleefully as an evil boy rips wings off flies. After the pain, there was cold. Bitter, brutal cold that shot straight to the bones, seemed to turn them brittle and thin as glass. She was torn from the warmth and the light and thrust into the cold and the pain, through the damp, hideous fingers of the blue mist. It seemed to wrap around her, binding arms and legs, strangling her until she wheezed for

302 NORA ROBERTS

even one breath of that cold air, wheezed for another even though it was like

inhaling iced blades.

Then even the mist was gone, and she lay shivering, alone in the dark.

Panic came first, made her want to curl up tight and whimper. But as she sucked

in air, she tasted... pine, autumn. Forest. She pushed to her hands and knees and

felt, yes, pine needles, fallen leaves, under her hands. And as the first edge of fear

eased, she saw the sprinkle of moonlight coming through the trees.

It wasn't so cold now, she realized. No, it was more brisk than cold, the way it was

meant to be on a dear fall night. She could hear the sounds of night birds, the long,

long call of an owl, the hushed music of the wind soughing through the trees.

A little dazed, she braced a hand on the trunk of a tree, nearly wept with relief at

the texture of the rough bark. It was so solid, so normal.

Fighting a wave of dizziness, she pulled herself to her feet, then leaned against the

tree while her eyes adjusted to the dark.

She was alive, she told herself. She was all in one piece. A little light-headed, a

little shaky, but whole. She had to find her way back home, and the only way to

get there was to move.

Which way, that was the question. She decided to trust her instincts and move

forward.

The shadows were so deep, it seemed she might stumble into one and fall forever.

The light that struggled through the trees was silver, the dull tone of unpolished swords.

The thought passed through her mind, absently, that there were too many leaves on the trees for so late in October.

She stepped on a twig, and the sound of it snapping under her heel was like a

gunshot that had her stumbling forward in reaction.

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

30\$

"All right, it's all right." Her own voice echoed back to her, had her pressing her

lips together to prevent herself from speaking again.

She looked down to check her footing, then simply stared, puzzling over her

shoes. She was wearing sturdy brown hiking boots, not the dressy black leather

pumps that she'd pulled on for the evening.

She'd wanted to dress up because . . . The thought faded in and out of her mind

until she bore down, grabbed it. She'd wanted to show off her ring. Yes, she'd

wanted to look fabulous to match her engagement ring.

But when she lifted her hand, she wore no ring.

Her heart jumped, and every other terror faded to nothing at the idea of losing

Jordan's ring. She swung around, raced back through the woods, trying to find the

place where she'd fallen.

Wakened?

And running, searching the ground for a glint of gold, she heard the first sly rustle

behind her, felt the bright chill sprint up her spine.

She'd been wrong. She wasn't alone.

She ran, but not in blind panic. She ran in a headlong rush to escape and survive.

She heard him coming behind her, too arrogant to hurry. Too sure he would win this race.

But he would lose, she promised herself. He'd lose because she was not going to die here.

Her breath whistling, she burst out of the trees and into the shimmering light of a full white moon.

It was the wrong moon. Part of her mind registered that as she loped across the grass. It shouldn't be full. It should be in its last quarter, waning toward the new

moon, and the end of her four weeks.

The end of her quest.

But here the moon was full, swimming in a black glass sky over the shadow of

Warrior's Peak.

304

NORA ROBERTS

She slowed to a walk, pressed a hand to her side to ease a stitch.

There was no white flag with the emblem of a key flying from the tower.

There

were no lights gleaming gold against the windows. It would be empty now, she

thought, but for the busy spiders and the skittering mice.

Because that was how Jordan had written it.

She was in the book, walking through the pages of his book.

"You've a very strong mind."

She whirled. Kane stood behind her, just at the edge of the woods.

"This is false. Just another fantasy."

"Is it? You know the power of the written word, the reality created on the pages."

This is his world, and was real to him when he built it. I've only brought you here.

I wondered if your mind would hold up to it, and I see it has. That pleases me."

"Why should you be pleased? I'm only that much closer to the key."

~

"Are you? I wonder, do you remember what happens next?"

"I know this wasn't in the book. You weren't in the book."

"A few changes." He rified an arm, swept it out hi an elegant gesture.

"That will

lead to a different ending. You can run if you like. I'll give you a sporting chance."

"You can't keep me here."

"Perhaps not. Perhaps you'll find your way out. Of course, if you leave, you lose."

He took a step closer, held up a hand that dangled a long white scarf. "If you stay,

you'll die. Your man made death in Phantom Watch."

He gestured toward the great house that Jordan had called the Watch in his novel.

"How could he know it would be yours?"

She spun toward the Watch, and ran.

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

3o5

W E have to get her back." Helpless, Flynn rubbed Dana's cold hand between his.

They'd laid her on the bed, tucked blankets around her.

"If this is what she's meant to do," Brad began, "she shouldn't have to do it alone."

"She's not going to be alone." Seeing only one choice, Jordan got to his feet.

"We're not bringing her back. The contact, calling her, being here. None of it's

bringing her back. Brad, I need you to go get Rowena. I need you to get her here,

and fast."

"That'll take an hour." Zoe, standing at the foot of the bed, now moved to the side.

"An hour's too long. Malory, Rowena came to us before. We have to try to make

her come to us again. Dana's not supposed to be alone/That's what he does. He

separates us, isolates us. We don't have to let him get away with it."

"We can try. We're strongest when we're together." Malory reached across the bed

for Zoe's hand, kept her other clasped around Dana's. "We'll ask her to come."

"Not this time." Zoe's fingers tightened, and the light of battle shone in her eyes.

"This time we tell her."

"How do they intend to order a god to make a house call?" Flynn said.

Brad laid a hand on his shoulder. "It's going to be all right, Hynn. We're going to

get her back."

"She looks like the portrait." His throat burned as he stared down at his sister's

face. Her white, empty face. "Like the daughter in your portrait. After..."

"We're going to get her back," Brad said more firmly. "Look, I'll head out right

now, get up to the Peak. I'll bring Rowena or Pitte, or both of them back if I have

to do it at gunpoint."

"That won't be necessary." Rowena stood in the doorway, with Pitte behind her.

306

NORA ROBERTS

DANA ran toward the house, fled toward it, hoping that the stone and glass would

offer some kind of protection.

What happened in the book? What chapter had she fallen into? Were her actions
her own will, she wondered, or written?
Think! she ordered herself. Think back and remember. Once she'd read a story, it
became part of her. It was in her memory. She just had to clear away the fear and
bring it back.
She was so scared. The screech of an owl had her heart pounding at the base of her
throat. Fog was eating over the ground now, thin and white, just edged with blue.
It thickened, seemed to boil around her feet until it was as if she waded through
smoke.
It muffled the sound of her running footsteps. And his, she realized. God, and his.
If she could reach the house, just reach the house, she could find somewhere to
hide until she caught her breath. She could find a weapon, defend herself.
For he meant to kill her, he meant to wrap that long white scarf around her neck
and pull, pull while she struggled for air, while her eyes wheeled frantically in her
head, while her veins burst with her blood.
Because he was mad, and she had seen the madness too late.
No. No. Those were Kate's thoughts. The thoughts of a fictional character in a
fictional world. It wasn't a fictional killer who hunted her now. It was Kane.
If he could, he would take something more precious than her life. He'd take her
soul.

At the last moment she veered away from the door. She remembered now, remembered this last chance and battle. Kate had wasted precious time battering against the wood, pounding on it and calling for help before she'd snapped back and accepted that there was no one to help.

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

so?

Edit out that bit, Dana thought, and setting her teeth, she smashed her elbow

through the window. She ignored the shock of pain from jagged glass scraping her

arm as she reached in, flipped the latch. With a grunt she shoved the window up,

leaped onto the ledge, and rolled inside. '

She landed hard enough to hear her own bones rattle, and lay stunned, gasping

against the pain as she struggled to see through this new layer of dark.

The air was stale and damp, and the heels of her hands skidded on dust as she

pushed herself up. No glossy floor, no dripping chandeliers or stunning antiques.

No fire roaring in the hearth.

Instead the room was dank and chill, with the gray spill of cobwebs and the breath

of ghosts.

This wasn't the Peak of her world, but the Watch of Jordan's. She gained her feet,

holding her throbbing right arm with her left, and limped across the room over

boards that creaked and groaned.

Good job with the atmosphere, Hawke, she thought, fighting to steady herself.

Class A haunted house you built here. The perfect place for our plucky heroine to battle the homicidal maniac.

Wincing, she reached down and rubbed her tender knee. Kate had banged up her

knee, Dana remembered, but it hadn't stopped her.

She drew a breath as she came to the entrance hall, saw the shadows facing off

with the streams of moonlight that snuck through the grimy windows.

She liked nothing better than diving into a book, Dana reminded herself, but this

was a little more than she'd bargained for.

She closed her eyes for a moment and took stock. She'd jammed her knee, jarred

her shoulder, sliced up her arm some. She was scared, so scared it hurt to breathe.

But that was all right, that was allowed. She could be

308

NORA ROBERTS

hurt, she could be scared. She wasn't allowed to panic, and she wasn't allowed to

give up.

"We'll see who pulls this story out in the end, you bastard. This goddamn

ex-librarian is going to kick your ass."

She heard the sly tinkle of glass being crushed underfoot and made a dash for the

stairs. And the big climax.

"YOU came." Zoe released Malory's hand, reluctantly let go of Dana's.

"Do

something."

Rowena stepped forward, touched her fingers lightly to Dana's wrist as if checking

her pulse. "What happened here?"

"You're the god," Flynn shot out. "You tell us. And you get her back. You get her back now."

Jordan nudged Flynn aside, stepped between them. "Why don't you know what

happened?" he demanded of Rowena.

"He's capable of blocking certain actions from us."

"And you from him?"

"Yes, of course. He doesn't have her soul," she said, gently, to Flynn.

"Whatever he's got, get it back." Flynn shoved forward again, pushing Malory's

hand away. He only flicked a cold, hard stare at Pitte when he moved to flank

Rowena. "Do you think you worry me right now?"

"You waste time in your fear for your sister."

"She's cold. Her skin's like ice. She's barely breathing."

"He took her into the book," Jordan said and had Rowena's attention snapping to

him.

"How do you know?"

"I know." He picked up the book he'd set on the night table. "She opened this and

she was gone."

She took the book from him. "It's gone. The key is gone from here. It was not to be

this way," she murmured. "He crosses too many lines, breaks too many pacts. Why

is he not stopped? This is not temptation, intimidation, or even threat."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

309

She turned to Pitte, and there was a spark of fear in her eyes. "He's changed the

field, and somehow he's moved the key."

"It was in the book?" Jordan interrupted.

"Yes. Now, somehow, he's taken it into the story, and her with it. He should not be permitted to do so."

"She's alone in there. Whether it's the story or whether it's Kane, her life's in

danger" Jordan gripped Dana's hand. "Bring her out."

"I can't bring out what he put in. It's beyond my power. He must release her, or she

must free herself. I can warm her," she began.

"The hell with that." Jordan snatched the book back. "Send me in with her."

"That's not possible." She turned away from him to lean over Dana, to run her

hands gently over Dana's face.

On an oath, Jordan grabbed her arm, spun her back to him. "Don't tell me it's not

possible." He felt a jolt, a shock that sang straight up his arm to his shoulder, but

he kept his grip firm.

"Take your hand off my woman," Pitte said very softly.

"What are you going to do, smite me? My woman's lying there helpless, going

through Christ knows what, because she gave her word to you. And you'd stand

here and do nothing?"

"He conjured this world he took her into. It's his power that holds there."

In a rare

sign of agitation, Rowena pushed at her hair. "There's no way of knowing what

he's done there, or what would become of you if I attempted it. And I'm not

permitted to take you beyond your own world. To do so would break the vow I

took when I came into this place, when I was given charge of the keys."

"I conjured this world," Jordan tossed back, and threw the book on the bed beside

Dana. "That's my mind in there, my words, and I've got a real problem with some

self-serving god threatening the woman I love, and plagiarizing

310 NORA ROBERTS

me to do it. I don't care how many vows you break, you're not leaving her in there

alone. You're sending me after her."

"I can't."

"Rowena." Taking her shoulders, Pitte turned her to face him. "He has the right.

Listen," he insisted as she started to speak. "A man shouldn't be stripped and

bound while his woman fights alone. It was Kane who broke an oath, and doing so

crossed beyond all honor. He was not meant to take her life. He was not meant to

touch the key by hand or mind or sorcery. It's a different battle now. We fight on

his terms or we lose."

"My love." She curled her fingers around his arms. "If I do this, even if I succeed,

you know what it may cost us."

"Can we live, in this prison, and do nothing?"

The sigh ached in her breast as she lowered her forehead to his heart.

"I'll need

you."

"You'll have me. Always."

She nodded, drew a deep breath, then looked at Jordan with eyes that seemed to

burn. "Be sure. If I do this thing, her life, yours, and all are at risk."

"Do it."

"Send us all." Zoe grabbed Dana's hand again. "Send all of us in. You said we're

stronger together, and we are. We'll have a better chance of getting her back if we all go."

"Valiant warrior." Pitte smiled at her. "This is not for you. But if gods are willing, you'll have your turn."

"Give him a weapon," Brad demanded.

"He can take nothing with him but his mind. Lie beside her," Rowena told Jordan,

then picked up the book. She closed her eyes, and it began to glow. "Ah, yes, I see.

Take her hand."

"I've already got it."

Rowena opened her eyes. The blazing blue was nearly black against the pure white

of her skin. Her hair seemed to lift in an unseen wind. "Are you ready?"

"Yeah, I'm ready."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE sn

"Bring her back." Flynn drew Malory close to his side as he looked down at

Jordan. "Bring her home."

"Count on it."

He felt that wind blow through him, fast and warm. He felt it whirl him through

time, through space, through shimmery silver curtains that parted with a sound

like the sea.

And he was standing in the moonstruck night, staring at the black peaks and

towers of Phantom Watch.

He sprinted toward it, noting the smoking fog, the scream of an owl. A dog would

bay at that fat, full moon, he remembered, and felt a curious satisfaction when the

sound echoed through the air.

Last chapter, he realized, and confirmed it when he saw the broken window.

Time to do. a little revising, he thought, and climbed through the shattered glass.

L^hapter Iwenty

WHAT can we do?" Malory held tight to Flynn. "There must be something we can

do besides stand here and wait."

"Keep close," Pitte told her.

"Perhaps there's a bit more." Rowena sat on the side of the bed, with the book in

her lap. "We've already broken our vow," she said to Pitte. "If there is punishment,

it won't change if we do more."

"Watch, then." He ranged himself beside her. "But they deserve the chance to win

this on thek own. Read." He laid his hand on her shoulders and merged his power

with hers. "So the others can watch as well."

She nodded and opened the book to the last chapter.

" 'She took the staks at a limping run, and the fear was all around her, crowded

close in the shadows of the Watch.'"

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

313

AT the landing Dana started to veer right. There were dozens of rooms, hundreds

of places to hide.

But for how long?

He would find her. The dark was no barrier for him.

Would he kill her? Could he? Kate had saved herself in the end, but she had

fought a man, flesh and blood against flesh and blood.

How could she know how much of this was Kane's world and how much was

Jordan's? Even, she realized, how much was her own creation brought
on by bits
and pieces she remembered from the book, spiked by her own fear?
At the sound below, she whked to see the shadow of Kane and the long
white
scarf glowing faintly blue in the path of the moonlight.
And she saw the fog, now cold and blue, begin to crawl up the steps
toward her.
"I'll find you, Kate." He crooned it. "I'll always find you."
The killer's words, she thought. She heard her answer spill out of her
mouth
without conscious thought. "I won't make it easy for you. It won't be like
the
others."
She pivoted on the landing and charged up the next flight of staks.
She needed distance, she thought frantically. Enough distance to buy
enough time
to clear her mind. Fear was clouding it, making it harder for her to
separate herself
and her actions from the character's.
She batted madly at cobwebs, had to stifle a scream as they clung to her
hak and
face. But somehow the innately human disgust steadied her.
Find the truth in his lies, she remembered, as her breath began to puff
out in thin
vapors.
"I'm Dana!" she shouted. "I'm Dana Steele, you bastard from hell, and
you're not
going to win this one."
His laughter chased her down the wide corridor where

314

NORA ROBERTS

doors swung open, slammed shut with bulletlike snaps. The mist was
sneaking

along the floor, added a hideous glow to the dark and curling ice around her feet.

The sweat sliding down her back and temples went clammy with cold as she

stumbled into a maze of hallways.

Breathless, she turned in circles. There were dozens of corridors now, and each

seemed to stretch for miles like some mad dream.

He was changing the story, she realized. Adding his own flourishes to confuse her.

And doing a damn good job.

"Choose. His voice whispered inside her head. Choose unwisely, you might

tumble off the edge of the world, or rush toward a pit of fire. But stand, only stand

and yield, and all this will be no more than a dream."

"You lie."

"Run and risk your Me. Surrender and save it."

"Choose," he said again, and she felt the hot silk of the scarf wrap around her

throat.

Horried, she clawed at it, raked her own skin with the frantic swipes of her nails.

She was choking, fighting the illusion of the strangling cloth as the blood roared in

her head like the sea.

Then suddenly she was free, and there was only the single corridor leading to the

last staircase.

Tears leaked from her eyes as she ran for it, dragging herself up by the banister as

her injured knee gave out under her.

She threw herself at the door, yanked at the knob with slippery hands.

Her breath

sobbed out of her burning lungs, scored her abused throat when she
stumbled out
into the silver light of the moon.

She was at the top of the Watch, high above the valley, where light
glowed against
the dark. People, she thought, were tucked away in those houses. Safe
and warm.

She knew them, and they her. Friends, family, a lover.
All so far away now, beyond her reach. Beyond her world.

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE sis

She was alone, and there was no place left to run.

She slammed the door closed, scanned the stone parapet for something
to brace

against the door. If she could keep the killer on the other side until day
broke ...

No, not the killer. Kane. It was Kane.

She was Dana, Dana Steele, and what chased her was worse than a
killer.

She pressed her back against the door, using her weight as a wedge.

Then she saw

she'd been wrong. She wasn't alone.

The cloaked figure walked in the shower of moonlight, one hand, with
its glitter of

rings, skimming along the low stone wall. Her cloak streamed out in a
wind that

made no sound. -

The phantom of the Watch, she thought, and closed her eyes for a
moment of

peace. The ghost. Jordan's ghost.

"He's coming." She was amazed how calm she sounded with a vengeful
god or

mad killer behind her, and a spirit of the dead in front. "To kill me, or
stop me, or

take my soul. It all comes to the same thing in the end. I need help."

But the figure didn't turn. She only stood, looking down at the forest where two

hundred years before, love had killed her.

"You're Jordan's. You're Jordan's creation, not Kane's. In the book you helped, and

the act set you free. Don't you want to be free?"

But the phantom said nothing.

"Kate's dialogue," Dana murmured. "I need Kate's words. What are they?"

As she dug for them, the door burst open, throwing her forward onto the stone.

"She can't help you." Kane ran the scarf through his hands as he stepped out.

"She's only a prop."

"It's all props." She scrambled backward like a crab. "It's all lies."

"Yet you bleed." He gestured toward her arm, her throat. "Is the pain a lie? Is your

fear?" His smile spread as

316

NORA ROBERTS

he came closer. "You've been a challenging opponent. You have a clever mind and

a strong will. Clever enough, strong enough to have changed some small pieces of

my picture. Imagining the stairs and the door to this place took considerable

strength. Bringing her here"-he gestured toward the cloaked figure-"even more. I

commend you."

Her mouth trembled open, then she shut it again. Had she imagined it, the route,

the door? Had she willed the ghost into being?

No, no she didn't believe she had. She'd been circling in confusion. ,

Jordan. It was Jordan's book. And he was a man with a clever mind and a strong

will. Somehow he was trying to help her. Damned if she was going to let him fail.

She was Dana, she reminded herself. And she was Kate-Jordan's Kate.

Neither one

of them would cower at the end.

"Maybe I'll just imagine you jumping off that wall to your bloody, messy death."

"Still hissing. A cornered cat. Perhaps I'll simply leave you here, deep inside a

book. You should thank me, as books are one of your pleasures."

He inclined his head as she got to her feet, as he saw her wince of pain.

"Or

perhaps I'll step back and let the killer come onstage. It would be interesting to see

you battle him, though in my version you may not triumph. Either way, it would

be entertaining. Yes, I believe I'd enjoy the theater of it."

The white scarf vanished from his hands. "Do you remember how she hears him

shambling up the steps, what she feels run through her when she understands that

she's trapped?"

Dana's breath began to hitch once more as she heard the slow, oncoming footsteps.

He couldn't force her to do anything, she remembered. He could only trick her

mind.

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

317

"How the fear clutched in her belly as she understood that she had run exactly

where he'd wanted her to run? And below, her lover sees her standing in the light

of the moon, sees the phantom beyond her, and the killer as he steps out onto the

stone.

"And he calls her name, in terror and despair, as he knows he can never reach her in time."

"Sure he can. All it takes is a rewrite."

Kane whirled as Jordan leaped out of the doorway.

The force of the attack knocked Kane back against the wall.

"You have no place here!"

"This is my place." Putting all his rage into it, Jordan rammed his fist into Kane's

face. It burned as if he'd shoved his hand into fire. Still, he reared back to do it

again. And was lifted off his feet and flung backward.

"Die here, then."

A sword shot up from the hand Kane raised. Dana sprang to her feet, and charged

him, sprang onto his back to fight with teeth and nails and spitting fury.

She heard

someone howling, and realized as her throat opened again, that the sound came

from her.

Kane knocked her away with a vicious backhand that sent her slamming hard

against Jordan. She saw blood on his face, from wounds that both she and Jordan

had inflicted.

And her heart danced.

"You will know pain," she shot out at him.

His eyes gleamed black as he raised the sword. "And you, worse. Your blood will

seal you here."

But as he swung down to strike, his hand was empty.

"Let's see if gods fly," Jordan said. Both he and Dana rushed forward.

Dana felt her shoving hands connect, then they passed through him as he vanished.

There was a swirl of smoke, a flash of dull blue light. Then nothing but the moon and shadows.

318

NORA ROBERTS

"Did I do that?" She had to wheeze out the words. "Or did you?"

"I don't know." He caught her when her legs gave way, and lowered them both to

the stone floor. "I don't care. Jesus, you're bruised and bleeding. But I've got you."

He wrapped her tight in his arms. "I've got you."

"Ditto." Undone, she buried her face against his chest. "How did you get here? He

didn't bring you. He wasn't expecting you."

"He's not the only god in the Valley these days." Lifting her head, he pressed his

lips to her cheek, her temple. "We've got to find our way back, Dana. I don't mind

being sucked into a story, but this is a little much."

"I'm open to suggestions." Hold on, she ordered herself. Hold on until it's finished.

"This is just about the end of the story. Heroine grapples with bad guy, and with a

little help from the ghost-who was no help at all, by the way-fights him off, sends

him over the wall just as the hero bursts out to save her. Kiss, kiss, frantic

explanations and declarations of love. Then they watch the. phantom of the watch

fade away, freed by her final act of humanity."

"You remembered that pretty well for somebody who read it six years ago." He

helped her to her feet, then looked toward the end of the parapet. The cloaked

figure stood, looking out at the forest.

"She's not fading."

"Maybe she needs a little more time." When she put weight on her knee, the pain

brought tears to her eyes. "Ouch! Damn. Maybe you could write in an ice pack for this knee."

"Wait." Fascinated, he stepped forward. "Rowena."

"Her name wasn't Rowena. It was... I can't quite remember, but it wasn't-" She

broke off, her eyes widening as the cloaked woman turned and smiled at her.

"Except it is Rowena."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

319

"I couldn't send you alone. We wouldn't let him take your lives here.

Will you

finish your quest?" she asked Dana.

"I haven't come this far to toss it in now. I was about to-" She cut herself off again.

"It's not in the book, not anymore. Not on the white page with the black words. It's

here now. In the story, like we are."

"I've already done more than I'm permitted to do. I can only ask you:

Will you

finish your quest?"

"Yes, I'll finish it."

She vanished, not with smoke and light as Kane had, but as if she'd never been.

"What the hell do we do now?" Jordan asked. "Go back-somehow-to the beginning

of the book and start looking? The lines you remembered were from the prologue."

"No, we don't have to go back, I need a minute first." She stepped to the wall,

breathed deep. "Autumn smoke in the air," she chanted. "The way the moon, a perfect ball, is carved into the sky. Everything-the trees, the valley ... look, you can just see the river, the way the moonlight glints off the water at the bend of it. It's all here, every detail."

"Yeah, nice view. Let's finish up and go look at it in our world."

"I like your book, Jordan. I don't want to live here, but it's a fascinating place to

visit. It's exactly the way I pictured it. You write a hell of a story."

"Dana, I can't do this. I can't stand thinking about the way you're lying there back

home. You're so pale, so cold. You look like-"

"Niniane, from Brad's portrait. One walks." She gestured to where Rowena had

been. "One waits. That would be Niniane, or in reflection, I guess it's me." She

turned, held out a hand. "I need the key, Jordan."

He stared at her. "Honey, if I had the key, I'd've given it to you long before this."

"You always had it. You just didn't know it. I'm the key,

320

NORA ROBERTS

and you're mine. Write it for me, Jordan. Put it in my hand, and let's go home."

"All right." He tried to wrap his mind around it. Then he touched her face and let

himself see. "She stood bathed in moonlight. Goddess and lover, with eyes deep

and dark with truths. He might have been born loving her, he wasn't sure. But he

knew, without question, that he would die loving her.

"She smiled" he continued as Dana's lips curved, "and held out her hand to him. It

glittered in her palm, a small, simple thing. The key she'd searched for, fought for.

It was old, but bright with promise. A slim bar of gold topped with a swirl of

connecting circles in a symbol as old as time."

She felt the weight of it, and the shape against her palm. Closing her fist around it,

she reached for him with her free hand. "It'll take us back," she said, "for the

epilogue."

SHE opened her eyes, blinked at the sea of faces, then blinked at her brother.

"Auntie Em." "

"Oh, Christ. Dana." He grabbed her, hauled her up against him, and rocked them

both.

"Ouch." But she was laughing as he hugged her tight enough to crack ribs. "Take it

easy. I've already got more than enough bumps and bruises."

"You're hurt? Where are you hurt?"

"If you can bear to let her go a moment, I'll tend her." Rowena touched Flynn's

shoulder.

"I have the key."

"Yes, I know. Will you trust me with it for now?"

"You bet." Without hesitation, she put the key in Rowena's hand.

Reaching back

for Jordan, she grinned at her friends. "What a ride."

"You scared the hell out of us." Malory swallowed back tears. "Both of you."

"Your face is bruised. Her face is bruised," Zoe said,

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

321

and moved in immediately. "Her arm's bleeding. Oh, her poor throat.

Where are

the bandages?"

"She won't need them, little mother," Pitte stated calmly.

"I cut my arm on some glass, breaking into the Peak, or the Watch, I should say.

And my knee feels about the size of a watermelon. As scary and weird as the

whole thing was, I have to admit, it was also very cool. I was ..."

She trailed off, looking down in surprise at the knee that had throbbed until

Rowena laid hands on it. "Wow, that feels good. Better than usual."

"Maybe so, but I bet you can still use this." Brad pushed a snifter into her hand. "I

remembered where you keep the brandy," he told her, then leaned down and

pressed his lips to hers. "Welcome back, baby."

"Good to be back." She downed a swallow of brandy, then passed the snifter to

Jordan. "There's a lot to tell."

"Would you prefer to stay here and rest, or are you feeling well enough to come to

the Peak tonight and use the key?"

Dana studied Rowena as the woman stroked her fingers over her bruised cheek.

"You'd wait?"

"The choice is yours. It always has been."

"Well, I'm up for it." She glanced at the clock, nearly goggled. "Nine? How can it

be only nine o'clock? I feel like I was out for days."

"Sixty-eight of the longest minutes of my life," Flynn told her. "If you want to do

this tonight, we'll go with you."

"I have to call the baby-sitter." Zoe flushed as all heads turned toward her. "I know

that sounds silly considering, but-"

"There's nothing silly about making certain your child is safe and well tended."

Rowena rose. "Pitte and I will take the key, and wait for you."

"If there's a problem with the sitter," Brad began, "I'll go stay with Simon. You

should be with the others for this."

322 NORA ROBERTS

"Oh, well." Flustered, she backed out of the room. "I'm sure Mrs. Hanson won't

mind staying a bit later. But thanks. I'll just go call."

"We'll start up as soon as Zoe's ready." Dana turned back to look at Rowena, but

she and Pitte were gone. "Man, they sure do poof in and poof out, don't they?"

"They'd have saved us an hour's driving time round-trip if they'd poofed us with

them." Jordan danced his fingers lightly over her cheek, down the column of her

throat. The bruise and scrapes were gone. "You sure you're up to this?"

"Not only up for it, raring. We'll fill you guys in on everything when we get to the

Peak. I'll feel better once the key's in the lock."

IN the portrait room they were served good, rich coffee and small sugary cakes

while Dana and Jordan took turns filling in those sixty-eight minutes.

"You were so smart," Zoe commented. "I don't know how you kept your head."

/> • • -

"There were moments when I lost it. I'd get confused, or I'd get scared, or he'd

change the plot on me. It helped a lot when I realized that Jordan was either there

or manipulating things, too. Getting rid of that maze Kane had created, pointing

me toward the right door, made a big difference."

"I didn't care for his editorial input." Jordan took her hand, kissed it just above the ruby. "And, in this case, I decided the hero should take a more active role in the denouement."

"No complaints here."

"Do you think you killed him?" Malory wanted to know. "When you pushed him over the wall of the parapet?"

"No, I don't think so. He went, you know." Dana wagged a thumb toward Rowena and Pitte. "Poof."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

323

"But we hurt him," Jordan put in. "And not just his pride. He felt it when I

punched him, just like he felt it when Dana tried to rip his face off. He bled. If he

can bleed, he can be killed."

"Not completely." Rings sparkled on Rowena's hands as she poured more coffee.

"Death is different for us, and some part of what we are remains. In the trees, in

the stones, in the earth or the water or wind."

"But he can be defeated," Jordan insisted. "He can be... vanquished."

"It could be done," she said quietly. "Perhaps it will be." "He retreated."

Brad lifted

his coffee cup. "He ran because he wasn't prepared to take you both on at once."

"He might've done us both in with that sword he pulled out of thin air. I think we

owe Rowena for that one," Dana said.

"He was not to shed mortal blood, not to take mortal life. It should never have

been allowed. We don't know why it has been, but since it has, we'll do whatever

we can to prevent him from doing so again." "At what cost to you?"

Brad

wondered. "The responsibility is ours," Pitte said simply. "As is the cost."

"You may not get back now, isn't that it?" He'd worked it out while trying to keep

his mind off his own fears for his friends. "You broke your vow, so even if all

three keys are found and used, even if the souls of the Daughters of Glass are

freed, you may not be able to go back. You'll be trapped here, in this dimension.

Forever."

"That's not fair." Seeing the truth of it on Rowena's face, Zoe stood up.

"That's not

justice. That's not right."

"Gods are not always just, and often far from fair." Touched by Zoe's defense,

Rowena rose. "This was our choice. One might say our moment of truth.

And now,

will you finish yours?"

She held out a hand, offering the key to Dana.

324

NORA ROBERTS

Odd, Dana thought, that she was wobbly in the knees now. But she stood, walked

to Rowena. "Whatever promise or rule you broke, you did it to save lives. If you're

punished for that, if that's the way your world works, maybe you're better off in

ours."

"There would be no lock if we had guarded them more closely. They are the

innocents, Dana, and they suffer because I was weak."

"How long do you have to pay for that?"

"As long as they do, and longer if that is the law. Take this and open the second

lock. You'll give them hope, and give it to me as well."

Pitte lifted the glass box, dancing with blue rights, out of the chest. He placed the

Box of Souls with great care on a table, then stood at one side, warrior-straight,

while Rowena stood on the other.

Watching those lights, Dana felt her heart ache.

There were two locks left, and she slid the key into the first, felt the gold heat

against her skin, watched light shoot along the bar, along her fingers as she turned

her wrist.

She heard the quiet click, a kind of sigh, then saw the frantic leap of those three

lights. With a flash, both key and lock melted away.

And there was one lock remaining on the glass prison.

Rowena stepped forward and kissed Dana on each cheek. "Thank you, for your

vision." Turning, she smiled at Zoe.

"Looks like I'm up." Because her cup rattled in her saucer, she set it aside.

"Will you come, all of you, at seven on the night before the new moon?"

"The night before the new moon?" Zoe repeated.

"Friday, seven o'clock," Brad supplied.

"Oh. Yes. Okay."

"Will you bring your son? I enjoy children, and I'd like to meet him."

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

325

"Simon? I don't want to take any chances with Simon."

"Neither do I," Rowena assured her. "I'd like to meet him, and do what I can to see

him safe. Whatever I can do, I will do to see that no harm comes to him.
I promise
you this."

Zoe nodded. "He'll get a big kick out of this place. He's never seen
anything like
it."

"I look forward to it. Dana? Could I have a word with you, in private?"

"Sure."

Rowena stretched out a hand, and took Dana's to lead her out of the
room.

"Did I ever tell you I like what you've done with the place?" Dana
scanned the
colorful mosaics on the floor, the silky walls, the gleaming furniture. "I
especially
like it now that I've seen what it could look like under less hospitable
circumstances."

"It will be yours soon."

"Still hard to imagine that."

"I keep meaning to show you this particular room." Rowena stopped in
front of a

double pocket door, swept it open.

And ushered Dana into a book lover's version of heaven.

It was a two-level library, with a lovely ornate rail encircling the second
level. A

fire was snapping away in a hearth of rosy granite, its light, and the light
from a

dozen lamps, glittering on the polished wood of the floor.

High above, a mural was painted on the domed ceiling. She saw dozens
of figures

from the most romantic of faerie tales. Rapunzel, spilling her golden hair
out of a

tower, Sleeping Beauty just wakened by a kiss, Cinderella slipping her
foot into a

delicate glass slipper.

"It's incredible," Dana whispered. "Beyond incredible."

Wide, deep chairs, long, deep sofas were done in leather the color of good port.

There were other small treasures in tables, in rugs, in art, but Dana was dazzled by

the books. Hundreds, perhaps thousands, of books.

326

NORA ROBERTS

"I knew you would enjoy it," Rowena said on a peal of laughter. "You look as

though you're about to be well pleased by a particularly skillful lover."

"You know, I have to be impressed by your being a god and all that sort of thing.

But this goes way over the top. I bow to you."

Delighted, Rowena perched on the arm of a chair. "When Malory completed her

quest, I offered her a gift of her choosing. Any boon that was hi my power to

grant. I offer you the same now."

"We made a deal. We both kept our part of it."

"So she said, or something close enough to the same. I gave her the portrait she'd

painted while Kane held her. It seemed to please her. I'd like to offer you these

books, all that's in this room. I hope that will please you when you're mistress of

this place."

"All of them?"

"Yes, all," she said with another laugh. "And all inside this room. Will you

accept?"

"You don't have to twist my arm. Thank you."/•She moved toward one of the

shelves, then stopped herself. "No, if I get started, I won't get out of here for the

next two or three years. I'll take very good care of them. I'll treasure this room,"

Dana told her. "And everything in it."

"I know you will. Now, let your man take you home. Let him cherish you tonight, as he wants to."

"I can do that. You already gave me a gift," she said as they walked out of the

room. "You gave him back to me."

"You took him back. That's entirely different." She paused when they reached the

door to the portrait room. "He's very handsome, your warrior."

"Yeah." She studied him, watched the way he turned his head, the way his eyes

met hers, held hers while he slowly smiled.

"See that look there?" she murmured to Rowena.

KEY OF KNOWLEDGE

327

"That's the one that turns me to jelly. If he knew that, he'd use it on me every time

he wanted his way."

WHAT were you and Rowena grinning about when you came back in?"

Jordan

asked.

"That's our little secret." Instead of opening the car door, she walked past it, then

turned to look back at the Peak. "It's going to be ours. I'm still trying to get my

head around that. We're going to live here, Jordan."

He moved behind her, wrapped his arms around her waist and drew her to him.

"We'll be happy here. The house wants happiness."

On a sigh, she tilted her head, pressed her lips to his cheek. "I'm already happy."

They drove away from the Peak, and neither saw the cloaked figure
standing on
the parapet under the thin light of the crescent moon.
She watched them go. She wished them well.
And turned when her warrior touched her shoulder. Pressing her cheek
to his
heart, she wept a little for what was, and for what might be.